

# I Appear to Have Been Reincarnated as a Love Interest in an Otome Game

## Table of Contents

1. [Character List](#)
2. [Prologue](#)
3. [Chapter 01: I have been reincarnated into the world I hate the most](#)
4. [Chapter 02: The duke's daughter, she is seriously way too cute...](#)
5. [Chapter 03: Robert, a person like you is...](#)
6. [Chapter 04: Are you picking a fight? You want me to accept it?](#)
7. [Chapter 05: It seems like my route started.](#)
8. [Idle Talk: My fiancé is acting strange \(Angelica\)](#)
9. [Chapter 6: It can only be said that nobles have performed their duty only if they could properly prepare in advance, is that not so?](#)
10. [Chapter 07: My accomplice brother-in-law](#)
11. [Chapter 08: Dates always have disturbances.....](#)
12. [Idle Talk: The Sweet Terror \(Angelica\)](#)
13. [Chapter 09: Is this what calm before the storm feels like?](#)
14. [Chapter 10: As I thought, Bitch's upbringing is weird.](#)
15. [Chapter 11: Don't make an enemy of him!](#)
16. [Chapter 12: I made them annul the betrothal](#)
17. [Chapter 13: Let's investigate this once more.](#)
18. [Chapter 14: The tremendous change and influence the case brought about](#)
19. [Idle Talk: A butler's domain \(Daniel\)](#)
20. [Chapter 15: The mystery deepens](#)
21. [Chapter 16: The mystery seems to ever increase.](#)
22. [Chapter 17: That place was the spot of terror.](#)
23. [Chapter 18: Bitch's secret.](#)

24. [Chapter 19: Bitch's story is amazing!](#)
25. [Chapter 20: Reincarnators everywhere!?](#)
26. [Chapter 21: Is everywhere around me a danger zone!?](#)
27. [Chapter 22: A sweet break after a long time.](#)
28. [Chapter 23: An interesting development?](#)
29. [Idle Talk: I thought I reincarnated into the otome game I yearned for, but isn't this a checkmate?](#)
30. [Idle talk: While I was observing out of interest, I fell for the 'reincarnator'.](#)
31. [Chapter 24: It's fine for riajuus to go and explode!](#)
32. [Chapter 25: Meticulous that it's scary!](#)
33. [Chapter 26: Strength leaving the body](#)
34. [Chapter 27: The early morning date was training for my rationality.](#)
35. [Idle Talk: Ruinous footsteps invade the body like aphrodisiac \(Brad\)](#)
36. [Chapter 28: Even at times like these, boys will be boys.](#)
37. [Idle Talk: How to calm down her in heat \(Jackie's case\)](#)
38. [Idle Talk: How to calm down her in heat \(Louis's case\)](#)
39. [Chapter 29: The first kabe-don in my life was amazing.](#)
40. [Chapter 30: "Punishment", that somehow sounds erotic.](#)
41. [Chapter 31: Dear God \(Angelica-sama\), I repent.](#)
42. [Idle Talk: My Prince \(Angelica\)](#)
43. [Chapter 32: They say a rumour lasts but 75 days, but aren't three months painfully long to endure?](#)
44. [Chapter 33: How does one win a rigged gamble?](#)
45. [Chapter 34: Michelle's transformation did not end yet?](#)
46. [Chapter 35: Men who would get the best solution naturally are indeed handsome people, I think.](#)
47. [Chapter 36: I'm sick and tired of waiting for problems to occur.](#)
48. [Chapter 37: First love is unforgettable. But that's no excuse for turning into a yandere.](#)
49. [Chapter 38: Idiot couples may be having fun, but it's miserable for others.](#)
50. [Chapter 39: I know she's a tsundere, but I never saw her be tsun to me.](#)
51. [Chapter 40: It's useless to say anything to idiots who don't realise their stupidity!](#)
52. [Chapter 41: Huh? Meeeeeeeeeeee!?](#)

53. [Idle Talk: I love you enough to want \(to\) capture.](#)
54. [Chapter 42: When a yandere becomes a tsundere, the dere disappears.](#)
55. [Chapter 43: Hatred too is part of \(love\) obsession.](#)
56. [Chapter 44: At times like these, I'm really glad I trained my body.](#)
57. [Idle Talk: A prediction is but a prediction, it is not certain. \(Daniel\)](#)
58. [Idle Talk: The natural way of pride \(Erius\)](#)
59. [Chapter 45: Also called the Epilogue, the scene before the next part.](#)
60. [Side Story 1: Another reincarnator](#)
61. [Side Story 2: A day in the life of a nameless servant.](#)
62. [Side Story 3: Onii-chan's situation with women.](#)
63. [Side Story 4: きす\(Kiss\)・キス\(Kiss\)・Kiss](#)
64. [Side Story 5: Fun life in imprisonment](#)
65. [Side Story 6: Henry's punishment](#)
66. [Side Story 7: April, the miserable girl?](#)

# Character List

Translator:  
This is from the Japanese site.

---

---

Author:  
Spoiler alert

---

---

The students wear white and navy blue coloured uniforms. Male students wear neckties, and female students wear ribbons. The tie colours are red for the first year students, blue for the second year students, and green for the third year students.

**Kyle Fox Justine, First Prince of the Empire. Age: 17**  
**Height: 181cm and still growing.**  
**Body: Slim, but with lean muscles.**  
**Hair: His fluffy blond hair is usually let down, but in public places he ties them back.**  
**Face: He has emerald green eyes. Has a special effect on him, as if to show that he is a prince.**  
**Personality: An average university student. Can badmouth well in a polite manner. Unexpectedly cynical. Okay with violence, but scared of homos.**

**Angelica Fontaine, Eldest daughter of a duke. Age: 15 (Soon turning 16)**  
**Height: 164cm**  
**Body: Curves where it should.**  
**Hair: A long blue extending down to her waist.**  
**Face: A deep amethyst eye, with a lovely smile.**  
**Personality: Can't let wrong things go. Like a caring older sister. But is problematic in that she rushes in to anything.**

**Louis Fontaine, Eldest son of a duke. Age: 17**  
**Height: 178cm and still growing.**  
**Body: Slim.**  
**Hair: Fluffy and light brown.**

**Face:** Blue eyes. Always has a warm smile on, but sometimes has a scary smile.  
**Personality:** Don't be fooled by his appearance. His nickname when he turns is 'demon lord'. His love for Jessica is unchanging from a young age.

**Daniel, Butler.**

**Age:** Unknown (Looks to be in his early thirties)

**Height:** 188cm

**Body:** Slender. Butler suits look good on him.

**Hair:** A silvery dark blue close to black, combed back.

**Face:** Blue-grey eyes, looks like a sculpture.

**Personality:** Superb abilities, with a kind mind. Always has coffee available, and is quick at brewing tea.

**Jessica Rowling, Eldest daughter of a marquess. Age: 16**

**Height:** 156cm.

**Body:** Slender, makes one want to protect her.

**Hair:** Lush shoulder-length hair

**Face:** Blue eyes. Has a warm smile.

**Personality:** Docile.

**Robert Redford, Eldest son of a marquess.**

**Age:** 16 (Soon turning 17)

**Height:** 195cm

**Body:** Bulging muscles. Macho man.

**Hair:** Short-cut red-brown hair.

**Face:** brown eyes.

**Personality:** Musclehead. Loves the words courtesy and chivalry. *"Book? What's that?"*

**Michelle Rhône, Eldest daughter of a baron. Age: 15 (Soon turning 16)**

**Height:** 155cm

**Body:** Slender

**Hair:** Pink shoulder-length hair.

**Face:** Green eyes, innocent and cute face.

**Personality:** Natural airhead? Energetic. Goes well with lucky perverts. Sense of virtue is loose, but does not cross the final line. According to the settings, she is hard working, positive and unyielding.

**Douglas Lawton, Eldest son of a count. Age: 18**  
**Height: 176cm**  
**Body: Masculine, but haggard.**  
**Hair: Green.**  
**Face: Looks like a serious person.**  
**Personality: Scarred by his fiancée's death. Originally has a brilliant mind, but his wound currently renders him useless.**

**Hughie Woodlloyd, Second son of a count.**  
**Age: 16**  
**Height: 170cm and still growing.**  
**Body: Wimpy {TN: Moyashi in raw; lit. bean sprout.}**  
**Hair:**  
**Face: Orange eyes, baby face.**  
**Personality: Has a childish crush on Michelle, as well as amity towards Jessica and Michelle. His first love is Angelica. Kyle thinks of him as a little brother, but Hughie's rivalry shows. Although he himself thinks that he's hiding it.**

**April August, Eldest daughter of a count.**  
**Age: 17 (Soon turning 18)**  
**Height: 163cm**  
**Body: Nice body.**  
**Hair:**  
**Face:**  
**Personality: Motherly. Treats Hughie like a little brother. But because he acted so out of common sense, had a superiority complex and did not listen to her advice, she lost any affection she had for him.**

**Jackie Fine, Second son of a duke from a neighbouring country. Age: 17 (soon turning 18)**  
**Height: 173cm and still growing.**  
**Body:**  
**Hair: Silvery blue.**  
**Face: Blue-grey eyes. His trademark is his friendly smile.**  
**Personality: Interesting personality. Will do anything to protect things that are precious to him. Has clairvoyance.**

**Henry von Lusto, Fifth prince of a neighbouring country. Age: 18**

**Height: 180cm**

**Body:**

**Hair: Shoulder-length hair.**

**Face: His bad personality shows.**

**Personality: Has a selfish and bigoted personality unique to a prince. Wants to get everything he wants. Has a strong sadistic tendency, and shakes others up to show affection. But is kind until he gets it in his hand.**

**Brad, etiquette teacher. Age: 29**

**Height: 178cm.**

**Body:**

**Hair: Silver**

**Face: Silver eyes, bespectacled. Has a soft smile. However, when there's prey, has very cold eyes.**

**Personality: Biased. His hidden personality was revealed. He has even stronger sadistic tendencies than Henry. According to the setting, he looks like a soft-faced teacher, but is in truth a bespectacled bastard.**

**Erius, butler. Age: Unknown (looks to be in his twenties)**

**Height: 179cm.**

**Body:**

**Hair: A silvery dark blue close to black, combed back. (Thinner colour than Daniel)**

**Face: Blue-grey eyes.**

**Personality: Strong elitist.**

**Doga, butler. Age: Unknown. (looks to be in his fifties)**

**Height: 167cm.**

**Body: Average.**

**Hair: Dark silver.**

**Face: Blue-grey eyes.**

**Personality: Calm, does not make unnecessary movements.**

# Prologue

I Appear to have been Reincarnated as a Love Interest in an Otome Game どうやら乙女ゲームの攻略対象に転生したらしい

Author: Minami

Summary (Credit to joeglens):

I Appear to have been Reincarnated as a Love Interest in an Otome Game I was reincarnated into a horrifying world.

That is...

The world of the otome game “I’ll Risk Everything for You”.

In that world I was reincarnated as the hidden love interest character, and decided to never involve myself with the Heroine.

My head gets all screwed up whenever I’m around them.

This is a love story of the main character who reincarnated into a love interest and the young woman who served as the villain.

<http://ncode.syosetu.com/n0693cw/>

Prologue

The template is about reincarnating into a otome game.

My little sister is really into those otome game “I’ll Risk Everything For You” with such title, it was set in a fantasy world with a image of something like medieval europe, where the setting is at a place called “White Rose Academy” where bunch of nobles attend to, and it is a type of game where you capture characters.

My little sister play that game using the TV in the living room everyday, and made me help with her capture, however as we advance along the game I have a hunch that “we will lose”...

“In this case, which reply should I choose, to Ani (Big Bro) which one will raise the good feeling?”



And every time when the choices come up, she always ask me.

Everytime she ask me to choose, I don't think it's "self played" anymore, but apparently she don't mind.

In this game, there are 6 characters to be capture.

Furthermore, after capturing all of the happy endings, bad endings, and normal endings, and also destroyed all of the character's flags, you'll be able to see the true end "Friend" by becoming friends with all of them, and when you complete all the endings, the hidden route for the hidden 7th character will comes out.

When you capture everyone including the 7th, you'll release the reverse harem end scenario.

My little sister is doing her best to aim for that reverse harem end. I regret the decision, but since I was forced to go along with her, I end up memorizing all of the correct choice for all of the heroine's captures.

Anyway....

"Don't you think this heroine is very bitchy? Just where is the "good personality and hard worker" characteristic at? Well, I acknowledge that she is a hard worker in another meaning."

I acknowledge her endeavor in seducing guys.

"In addition, her behaviors are too idiotic. Don't even have common sense. Won't it be too DQN (rough or uncultural/inferior) if this type of person become real?"

My little sister cackle at my opinion.

"You can't say that~!!!"

Why is she laughing.

To me, the rival character, the "Villainess Girl" is more likeable.

The daughter of the duke who is the hidden character's fiance, always appear in all of the character's capture route. Her features is depicted like a fox, but she is considerably beautiful. The mob characters who went too far with their

bullying, she warn them to put the end of such farce and protect the heroine, and then she valiantly and firmly reprimand the heroine's ostentatious behavior.

If it were me, I would have reprimand her hasher, however the heroine was like "She hates me!", and the foolish capture targets were like "Do not bully Heroine – tan!!" or something along those lines. .

They are seriously bunch of retards.

Being surrounded by bunch of retards, the daughter of the duke who is the only one with common sense and proper pride of a noble, was made out to be the villain.

It's a terrible world.

I, who lives in modern Japan consider myself to be fortunate.

If I were to be thrown into that world, my head would becomes strange.

# Chapter 01: I have been reincarnated into the world I hate the most

I Appear to have been Reincarnated as a Love Interest in an Otome Game どうやら乙女ゲームの攻略対象に転生したらしい

Author: Minami

Summary (Credit to joeglens):

I Appear to have been Reincarnated as a Love Interest in an Otome Game I was reincarnated into a horrifying world.

That is...

The world of the otome game “I’ll Risk Everything for You”.

In that world I was reincarnated as the hidden love interest character, and decided to never involve myself with the Heroine.

My head gets all screwed up whenever I’m around them.

This is a love story of the main character who reincarnated into a love interest and the young woman who served as the villain.

<http://ncode.syosetu.com/n0693cw/>

---

## Chapter 1: I have been recarnated into the world I hate the most

In the end, during my whole summer vacation I have been forced to play the game by my little sister.

Now that I have to go to college, I have finally been released from that torture, and with such exhilarating feeling, I cheerfully walk down the street toward the train station that’s 5 minute away.

“How far have you advance in that game? Have you capture Kyle – sama yet?

“Nope~. Since that Angelica bitch was so annoying. More like Kyle – sama is too good for someone like you~!”

I was almost at my destination, but I was detained by the traffic light, and at

the same time while I'm waiting for the traffic light to change I somehow overheard the conversation from a group of high school girls.

Apparently those girls were also playing that game.

And since the hidden character's name came out, they seem to be pretty far ahead.

However...

The duke's daughter, she seems to be hated by them.

While I'm listening to their conversation, I unintentionally let out a wry smile.

In my opinion, I think that girl is pretty cute.

While I was distracted by my thought, I suddenly heard a terrible scream and a very loud crashing sound around my surroundings.

Eh? While I was caught up in my thought, a large truck plunged toward where I'm standing.

Aa, I'm totally dead.

Before I notice, I was standing in a unknown place.

Somehow it was a place that's awfully luxurious. And there's foreigners in front of me.

It seems like they were in the middle of a meal.

A nice trimmed camellia like red hairs, and brown eyes. Somehow, I feel like I seen this person before.

"Kyle, tomorrow is the entranced ceremony isn't it. I and you, and your fiance who look forward to the academy life will start soon. I guess today is really the "last supper", huh."

Before my eyes, the foreigner said to me with a pompous wink.

Somehow, annoying.

However, despite being a foreigner, this guy's japanese is pretty good.

I was thinking of such thing despite being utterly confused.

Anyway, why is this person talking to me? Although he seem familiar, but isn't

this our first meeting? Why the hell is he talking to me this frankly. Also, that's not even my name.

I wonder if this disappointment of foreigner's head alright? Did he mistake me for someone else?

I mean my name is....

When I try to remember, a severe headache suddenly attack me, and I lost my conscious on the spot.

In the trance of my unconsciousness, I finally grasp my current situation.

Kyle = Fox = Justin's memories till now have been pouring into my mind.

Apparently, it seems like I have been reincarnated into that game's hidden character.

Is this possibly a dream and I'm not actually dead, or is it something like reincarnation that have been a trend these days and that it happened to me, either way to me right now this is nothing but an illusion.

If it were a dream I would just temporarily have fun, but if it's reincarnation I need to prepare the way I live in this world.

.....Well, there's nothing else I can do other than to resolves to have fun in this world.

I mean, to me "right now" is nothing but an illusion.

After concluding my resolution, I finally regained my conscious. Apparently, I'm able to open my eyes now.

I hope that when I wake up I will be in the world where Japan is, and so I slowly open my eyes.

My hope, was not fulfilled.....

I stared at the canopy, and thought that even though it's a place I don't know at all, I know that this world is not Japan, but it's that crazy otome game's world.

I who had faint at the dinning, seems to have been taken to my room.

Tears came out as I think about the future from now on.

My reincarnation? I found out that I'm the first prince's Kyle, the hidden

character.

If I continue to live this life, I will eventually have to shoulder this country.

Also, there are at least 3 other retard captures that will become entourage in the future.

If their personality just like the game, then they nothing but retards.

Putting having retards as associates aside, to think I have to governor a country, that is just “impossible” you know?

At least if I were reincarnated during my early childhood, I would have been able to at least correct the other captures’ personality....

At least there’s something to be relief of.

The fiance is at least a decent person.

If it’s her, she will be a wonderful queen with common sense. Also, she’s also my type.

Toward her, Kyle only hold emotions that are obligatory because the marriage is nothing, but a political maneuver and that there’s a clear cut line.

What about her? To Kyle, does she have any feeling of love toward him? Or....

From what I seen in the game, she seems to be in love...

According to my common sense, people only married each when they are in loved.

However, in this world there’s probably political marriage as well.

That lady, she had no problem with the political marriage, and the only complication is the feelings.

Well, I favor her when I was playing the game. However, since I have never actually met her, whether I will have feelings or not that I do not know.

I don’t think of trying hard to have feelings for her, but an unfavorable relationship with the queen will be uncomfortable.

Also there’s this problem in what to do with those retard associate, but holding a favorable relationship with the empress is more important.

First, I need to see if I can get in contact with her.

Eh? What about the heroine?

I will absolutely not let her get involve with my life at all. Absolutely not!

A stupid bitch like her, if she throw herself onto me I'll mess her up appropriately, however my current position won't allow that.

After all, every action bear heavy responsibilities.

That's why, I'll ignored her. With all my power.

My ignoring power is considerably strong. Well, there's probably no need to be worried.

---

### Other project I'm thinking of doing...

The Daughter of the Albert House Wishes for Ruin



Summary (credit addnewtap): Noble's daughter Mary Albert remembers in the middle of the opening ceremony that this world is the otome game she played in her previous existence, and she is actually a character that came from that game. Mary was the game's villainess who got ruined in exchange after harassing and interfering with the heroine, she ended up with a typical villainess'

destruction route. When it came to it, she exclaims “This life isn’t a joke!” and attempts to avoid destruction... or not!

Rather than assuming defiant attitude, she pushes her way through the destruction route.

“The last laugh will be mine!”

Getting her attendant Adi involved, she has one year to aim towards destruction. Will Mary be ruined just like her path in the game!?

**or**

Starting Life Anew in Another World *Duke Arc*

Summary (joeglens): “Aah, I wanna die.” Were the mutterings of college student. Sakagami Hiroto, came to the aid of a high school girl in the middle of the crosswalk about to be hit by a truck, and was himself run over instead. But on the edge of death, his final thoughts were “I can’t die here! There’s no way I could die here!” , then he passed. Dying with words of wanting death and thoughts of not wanting to die, he met with God in the interval between life and death, and was instead reincarnated to another world. Once there, he obtained a non-offensive, support-specialized skill.

Unable to do anything about it, he accepts his lot and prepares himself for what’s ahead.

**Which one do you suggest I shall do first?**



## Chapter 02: The duke's daughter, she is seriously way too cute...

I found a picture that fits what I think Robert looks like...you know the annoying pompous wink dude with red hair and brown eyes? What do you guys think?



Warning! Cute Overdosed! Don't say I didn't warn you!

---

Chapter 2: The duke's daughter, she is seriously way too cute...

Didn't he say something about tomorrow, a entrance ceremony or something?

I recall back at what that foreigner said when we were in the dining room.

Now that I think of it, isn't he....

One of the captures target, Robert from the Marquis household isn't he? He was that idiot, who broke off his engagement in the presence of the public, all so he can let the bitch enter his household, and even knock down the evil villainess, Angelica's fan.

Then, everyone starts to see Angelica as their enemy. (TL: Poor girl) Thanks to that, the bitch had an easier time to approach other capture targets, and they had fall pretty quickly.

Yup, what a wonderful bite the dog have.

"Puuuuuu.....kukukuku!" (TL: He breath out and start laughing evilly...)  
Remembering about Robert's choice options, I end up bursting out a laughter.

From that voice, the butler notice that I've woke up and opened the curtain of the canopy.

"Your highness, I'm glad that you have awaken. Are you feeling unwell anywhere?"

He indeed had this "sebastian", butler like feeling as he ask me with much concern. (TL: SEBASTIAN IS THAT YOU!!!) "Aa, I have worried you, Daniel. There's no particular problem."

"I see. However, just to be sure I have called the doctor to examine you. Is it fine to do so right now?"

"There's really no need to worry... Well, let him in anyway.

I think it's a bit exaggerated, but then again it's a given for my position.

I lift half of my body off the bed, and the doctor gave me medical attention. Well, of course there's no problem whatsoever.

For now, he said that it doesn't seem like fatigue is the problem, but I should take the day off tomorrow and rest anyway. That's bad.

Tomorrow is the entrance ceremony. Angelica will be there.

As her fiancé, it's my privilege and responsibility to escort her!

What kind of woman she is, I want to see it with my "eyes", rather than with Kyle's memory.

This dude, he clearly carried no emotions toward Angelica, and according to the memory that had poured into my mind, he only acknowledged her as a fellow noble.

Compromising with only attending the ceremony and not the welcome party, I was finally able to convince the doctor to let me go.

The next morning, we decided to pick her up from her estate and escort her to her dorm.

Ah, about the school. From 15 years old to 18 years old, the nobles are educated on socializing (networking) so they can build fresh new personal connections, and everyone who lives in the dorm is like that. The lady's dorm and gentleman's dorm are separate by buildings, and everyone has their own private rooms. Inside those private rooms there is a bedroom, a living room to serve guests, and 3 servant rooms, and as you can see it's for rich people.

They usually bring a group of excellent attendants that consist of one butler, one male servant, and two female servants.

As for meals, people either eat in their room or at the dining hall.

The school dress code is a navy blue and white tone blazer-style uniform, and everyone has to wear it inside the Academy.

There's a lot of things I want to complain (tsukkomi) about, but since this world was originally a world inside a game, well it can't be helped.

Apparently, they also accept international students, thus it's an environment where everyone is doing their best to build political connections with other countries.

And, it's typical for ladies who still doesn't have an engagement partner yet to try to find one here.

While I was reviewing the information about this world, I have arrived at her estate.

Since we had sent a preliminary letter to them, the people in there came out to welcome us expectantly. The head of the house, the duke and his wife, and today's heroine, Angelica, came out to greet us with a big smile.

I got off the carriage, and mutually greet and smile back, and then I turn to face her as I give her my special smile.

Her brand new uniform made her look freshly pure, and for a moment I stared at her beautiful sharp eyes and innocent looking face.

"Shall I escort you to the Academy? My princess?"

I awkwardly held her white gloved slender hand up toward my chest, and kissed it.

Just like that, I upturned my eyes and look at her, who have a crease between her eyebrows giving me a difficult expression.

Did I made a mistake with my greeting?

While thinking so, I once more observe her, and for some reason she is trembling. Also, I couldn't see her face clearly because she is hiding it behind her hairs, but her ears seems to be red.

"Y, yes. Thank you (or I'm in your care/please take care of me), Kyle – sama."

Her voice as well, seems to be shaking?

Is this perhaps.....

In order to confirm my thought, I decide that I shall once again push it a bit more.

I invite her into my elegant carriage and sat beside her, and the carriage immediately depart.

"As always, you're very beautiful. Angelica."

Immediately, once again, I held the back of her gloved hand toward my lip and stared into her eyes, smiling a sweet smile.

Thump!! A loud sound resound, and the beautiful girl with sharp eyes flushed deep red.

She look at me with a fish like eyes that turned cloudy a few times, but I feel

like she had an embarrassed face.

.....As I thought, she is shy.

It appears that she now have an embarrassed expression and complicated face.

And it seems like she is panicking very bad, “Eh, A....a.....” and somewhat muttering out a small voice as her eyes swims around.

What a funny reaction.

“Pu!”

That appearance just look so cute, that I was unable to hold back my voice.

“Huu! Please stop teasing me!!”

With a bright red face, Angelica with an angry tone protest to me.

“I am not teasing you. It just that you’re too excessively cute.”

“.....Huu!!”

As I comment that she is “excessively cute” with a smile then I questioned “Eh? Are you turning redder?” because her face flushed even deeper red too the point I worried about her health. And just like that she stayed quiet.

Her hand that I had kissed stayed embraced in my hand and time seems to have stopped, and sometimes I gently caressed her hand with ticklish feelings.

During the travel, she with an embarrassed face, flutter her gaze at me from time to time. It doesn’t seems like she dislike my behavior. (TL: Oh, such a cute lil thing! I just wanna take her away from Kyle. LOL) “Hm? Is something the matter?” With a somewhat of an unnatural smile she reply as she cast her eyes down, “Aa....., no, nothing.”

This, doesn’t this shows that she likes me?

From Kyle’s memory, no matter where I look, there was never a situation like this.

Till now, I had greet her politely like any other times, and as usual kissed the back of her gloved hand, however this is the first time she had shown such reaction.

It appears that my special smile is considerably destructive.

Yup, this must be a sexual harassment.

---

It's so sweet, I had a sugar rush and swirly eyes myself.

# Chapter 03: Robert, a person like you is...

Why I disappear? Life happens.

---

## Chapter 3: Robert, a person like you is...

Upon on our arrival at the Academy, in front of the main gate we got off the carriage, and I escort her through the tree-lined street heading to the orientation.

On the way there, I told her that I will be excused from the welcome party, and that I will entrust her to her one year older brother to escort her there instead.

“I understand.....Yesterday, I heard that you were unwell. I thank you for escorting me despite being in such condition.”

Seems like she knows about how I fainted yesterday as she laughed with understanding.

From her eyes, I can see that she is worried and thankful towards me. However, I also feel a little bit of loneliness from her as well.

“I’m sorry. I actually want to escort you for the whole day, but I was unable to receive permission.

I secretly check the surrounding. It’s fortunate that there’s no one.

.....As a compensation, I hope you’ll like it?

I gently whisper in her ear, and put my lip on top of her forehead, surprising her.

Seems like the stimulation is too strong, because she stop moving altogether. And become utterly speechless.

She who become like a computer that froze because it was unable to process the information, I put my hand behind her back and resume escorting her.

In the end, by the time we had arrived, she still couldn’t process her error

code.

Following through with my promise to the doctor, when the ceremony end, I entrust her to Lewis, and follow Daniel, who appear without making a sound, back to my (dorm) room.

Immediately, I was made to change my clothes and force to the bed.

While I stare at the canopy of the bed, I start to think about Angelica.

Her appearance and reaction is to my liking. Very adorable.

Her deep blue eyes and healthy long hair, especially the eyes with the color of a blue gem that leave a strong impression, her slim fingers, and her slender body with enough fat in the right areas.

Everything is to my liking.

Also, a beauty with a strong appearance yet easy tease, this certainly is a gap moe.

It will be nice if the personality is exactly like what it was in the game. It will probably take some time to confirm this.

More like. I completely feel in love at first sight.

I will definitely make her mine! Wait, isn't she already engage to me?

Then I will have her fall madly in love with me.

I believe that she is already fond of me, however I'm unable to settle my mind.

Thankfully, Kyle's appearance is extremely high class! "The Prince" like features with blonde hair and green eyes. When smiling a sweet smile with looks like that, the little sister who is in the middle of capturing the game had also died in agony. (TL: Probably died in agony from not being able to capture him in real life. I totally understand.) Firing up with fighting spirit, I decide to capture her heart.

Remembering today's moments with her, I vowed to myself.

The next morning, while I'm eating breakfast, I heard an unexpect rumor.

Apparently, Robert had ignore his fiance and escort another woman.

That woman is, as you might have expected, it's the bitch you see.



Now that I think of it, the event where they met inside the game is that entrance ceremony. If I remember correctly, it was outside of the assembly hall where he helped the bitch who got lost.

However, I didn't think something would have happened at the welcome party.....

Wait, isn't this the route to the hidden character's capture?

In other word, Angelica. The two of them have a intense dislike for her to the point violence. (To summarize, Angelica and Lewis developed an intense hate to bitch at the party and want to slap the shit out of her) Since Lewis was beside her, he should more or less (have her back) be protecting her....

Afterwards, I need full detail information in what had happen.

After breakfast, I went to visit Lewis room, to inquire about yesterday's event.

Sure enough, Angelica is in extreme bad mood. Lewis the siscon praise with a evil smile, "As I thought, our family's little sister is the best."

"I mean, what I said is natural, no? Jessica, made her cry you know. The surrounding women who had heard also sneered.

He scrutinized his blue eyes, tilting his head. At the same time, his light brown hair without hesitation fall toward his cheek, showcasing his lovely face.

This is bad, Lewis is seriously pissed.

This person is usually quiet, but is scary when pissed. (According to Kyle's memory) Jessica is a daughter of a Marquis, who is also Lewis and Angelica's childhood friend.

Kyle also knew her since he was little, and according to his memory, she's a lady that has a gentle and lovely appearance that give a healing effect to people.

To Lewis, she's like another little sister.

.....Probably, that's not all there is to it. (TL: UEHUEHUEHUE! I SEE WHERE THIS IS GOING!) The scheming siscon Lewis (according to Kyle's memory) did not appear much in the game, because he is too busy caring about Jessica, is what I think.

The fact that he did not become one of the capture characters despite the looks he have is a mystery. It's probably that while creating his character as a extremely busy person, there wasn't a timeslot for the bitch to take advantage of.

From the way he is treated inside the game, I can tell that the creator really treasure him.

As for his sister, he had believed in Kyle and had entrust her to him.

And as you know in Kyle's capture route, his expectation had been betrayed.

Well, I will never be swayed by a bitch like her.

It seems like, the reaction from Angelica's surrounding (people around her) is in her favor, so I guess there's no need to worry.

I'll keep an eye on the situation and backed her up.

I, while thinking of that, decide to go see Angelica before class.

# Chapter 04: Are you picking a fight? You want me to accept it?

## Chapter 04: Are you picking a fight? You want me to accept it?

If I recall correctly, the schedule for the new students were various introductory sessions in the morning, and a tea party that also serves as a social gathering in the evening, right?

I also heard in the briefing session this morning that I should drop by for a greeting.

Originally, it should have been done in the welcoming party last night.

Then, I should just pick up Angelica and go straight to the banquet hall.

Thinking so, I first returned to my room to prepare myself for going to the girls' dormitory.

As I was walking down the hallway, Robert was standing in front of my room.

Then, on seeing me, he ran up to me.

“Yo, Kyle!”

“...Robert, what is it?”

“No, um, you didn't come to the party yesterday, right? I was wondering what was up.”

He's acting suspicious.

Maybe...

“Because I collapsed the day before, the doctor forbade me from going... More importantly, about what you did. I heard that you caused a commotion at the party yesterday, is that true?”

I decided that I should sound him out.

He probably has something to say to me about that.

“Oh, that thing, that wasn't me, but your fiancée!”

—As if he was waiting for that, Robert started laying out excuses desperately along with what I heard from Angelica, trying to justify himself.

Oh, and, the reason why he's talking as if he's so important, is because Kyle

asked his friends to draw a line between public and private matters, asking them to treat him as a friend in private places.

Especially during school life that is out of reach of the eyes of adults.

“However, even if this is ‘school’ and not high society, do you not think that there are minimums that a noble should keep?

“...That is true.”

“Ultimately, your actions have caused your fiancée grief and made her a laughingstock, didn’t it? Although your pride was hurt by being reprimanded by Angelica, that was you reaping what you sowed.”

As if I was rejecting him, I scoled him coldly.

However, since he’s an idiot, he probably would bear a grudge against Angelica instead, so maybe I should cheer him up slightly.

“If your fiancée can avoid being ridiculed by brought into derision yourself, is that not much better? Is that not how a gentleman takes responsibility?”

I lightly soften my tone and smiled.

“R, right. I am a true gentleman who protected his fiancée by drawing attention to myself.

Robert’s mouth almost formed into a grin.

Truly, he is an idiot. Too easy to manipulate.

Without a doubt, he’s probably thinking something along the line of ‘self-sacrificial me, so cool’

Watching this idiot makes me ‘irritated’, but I’ll bear it, thinking that this is for Angelica.

As I was brooding so and repressing myself from making a cynical remark, this guy smiled refreshingly.

“Well, it must be tougher for you since you have such a fiancée.”

He gently pats my shoulder, shouts something along the line of ‘let’s do our best, see ya!’ and goes away.

...Robert, are you picking a fight with me?

.

.

Because of that idiot, I lost precious time that I could have been spending with her!

I quickly returned to my room, and promptly contacted her that I will be going to pick her up. Then I picked out a pink rose from one of the vases in the room, checked if there were any thorns on it, then took it with me, heading for her.

.

When I arrived at the girls' dormitory, she was already waiting at the entrance. As I was expecting to wait a bit since I thought she would take a while to prepare, I hurried to her side, quickly but gracefully.

"Good morning, Angelica. I apologise for the sudden visit."

I give her the rose in my hand, and smile apologetically.

"Good morning, Sir Kyle. Please don't apologise, I also wished to see you."

Angelica received the rose as though she was happy, and smiled furtively.

Mm, she's cute today as well!

I gave a thumbs-up in my head.

.

.

.

Since there was still time until the morning explanatory session, we decided to go to the courtyard. Arriving at the courtyard, we sat side-by-side on the bench under the big tree. Angelica looked embarrassed yet somewhat happy as she looked on at the rose.

"I am sorry that I couldn't be with you yesterday..."

"It is alright.....It was nothing. My dear brother was with me as well, and that was not anything to be called a commotion."

She understood my intentions when I told her that I was sorry for not being

with her at the commotion.

Seeing her haughty smile, I felt something flare and surge up.

Ehem.

She's just too cute.

...Just a little's fine, right? Luckily there's no one around as well.

I gently placed my arm on her. Flustered, she turned away from me and lowered her head. It can't be helped, then. Looking at the places I can see – her temple, cheek, earlobe and hair -, I made light smacking sounds as I kissed those places in turn.

Seeing her reddened and quivering was too cute as well.

As I was doing this, I realised there was something I was forgetting. It was important, but I can't recall what it was.

...Well, I can think of that later after I part with Angelica.

I want indulge fully in this sweet mood.

“Kyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!”

Something fell into my arms as I was thinking that.

---

---

[Raw link](#)

## Chapter 05: It seems like my route started.

### Chapter 5: It seems like my route started.

I inadvertently sent a ferocious glare at the object that fell into my arms.  
But you know?

I was right next to Angelica, you know? What if she was hurt!

“Aaaah! I’m really sorry! I climbed the tree and lost my balance!!”

I hear something ridiculous coming from my lap, but that’s not important! I have a more important thing to check on!

“Are you alright? Are you hurt anywhere?”

I moved my hand from its resting on Angelica’s shoulder to her cheek, sweeping and checking over her.

“.....Yes, I am fine...”

“Yes! I’m alright! Ah, but maybe I’m a bit grazed?

Two answers returned to my question.

To the one that’s still on my lap, um, I don’t care.

For now, I’m glad Angelica is unhurt.

Then now I must carry out my duty as the imperial prince... although I don’t really want to.

“It seems you are hurt. Then, I will escort you to the infirmary.”

I forced a made-up business smile and offered help to the object on my lap. Then, that object blushed as if she was happy and stared at me absentmindedly. In addition, the brazen thing had the gall to lean up on my chest!

“Daniel!”

As I called for him in a slightly annoyed tone, he appeared out of nowhere. ...Well, since it was me who called him so it would be strange for me to say this, but he’s too good at hiding his presence. A ninja? Is he a ninja or something?

“Take this lady to the infirmary.”

After I delivered my command while suppressing the boiling anger with an

emotionless voice, Daniel promptly replied yes and pulled down the thing from my lap.

“I have an important appointment so I can’t escort you myself, but if there’s anything you need please tell Daniel.”

Feigning an expression that would rival a superb businessman, I so informed the thing, then turned around to face Angelica and lent her my hand to help her up.

“Angelica, let us return to the dormitory first. My uniform has a footprint on it now. You also might be bruised, so let’s check up thoroughly.”

Desperately trying not to frown, I lifted up Angelica, who was still a bit worried, in my arms.

The mud-stained parts are her shoulder and her thigh. It is possible that she is hurt, so I can’t possibly let her walk in this state.

“P, please let me down! I can walk!”

Objection dismissed. Whether or not she can walk, it’s fine, it doesn’t matter. I just don’t want to make her walk.

I carried her to the girls’ dormitory in silence, and was led to her room by the maid who was waiting in front of the dorm.

Softly laying Angelica on her bed, I explained to the maid what happened and asked her to see the doctor just in case.

I also told her not to force herself to come to the introductory session this morning, and left her room.

.....The rose she held close to her chest till the very end, left an imprint on my mind for some reason.....

.

.

.

Shit! Shit!! Shit!!! How could I forget such an important thing!  
This morning, I did realise that we went into the ‘hidden character reverse harem route’!



Striding rapidly to the hall of the introductory session, I condemned myself.

I resent my own carelessness.

That event just before is the first meeting event between Kyle and the bitch!

If I recall correctly, in the game, at that place Kyle reprimanded Angelica about the incident at the party, which turned into a fight.

Then, the bitch fell down, so Kyle takes the bitch to the infirmary, abandoning Angelica.

From there on the couple starts having disagreements at delicate situations, slowly causing the envious Angelica to become broken, that she starts harassing the bitch.

.....That scene was enough to make me feel broken-hearted when I was just watching from the side.

Even though I knew in advance.

Along with my rage the pain I felt that time revived.

In the game as well Kyle did not attend the welcoming party.

So he heard the news from Robert second-hand and sort of advised Angelica.

So Kyle listened carefully to Robert, huh.

For me, Angelica's actions were within my expectations, but it must not have been the same for Kyle in the game.

Then Angelica who could not accept Kyle's harsh words snaps back.

I remember then that there was the choice to climb the tree then. After climbing up, the player character gets interested in the conversation below, and listens in for a short while before she falls down. (This time, she might have been interested in the lovey-dovey fooling around below...)

Kyle, seeing the interruption as a good chance to shake the awkward mood off, takes her to the infirmary and abandons Angelica.

It was that kind of event.

Probably though, since it was mediocre for a first meeting event, it wouldn't pass as one, I think.....

No, from the beginning, since it was Daniel who took her to the infirmary, maybe it will go into the 'Fantastical Daniel route'?

Such absurd thoughts were entering my head.

If my route actually did get established, then the next event is.... there's that 5 days later, huh.

I'd like to avoid it, but Angelica too is involved in it. If it's her, she wouldn't just let it go.

Then, I'll have to support her for the next 5 days, and prepare cleaning up the aftermath of the event.

And most importantly--

I'll conquer Angelica, and see how she feels for me!

To ensure that she will not feel anxious about my love for her, I will make her head over heels in love with me!

.

Filling myself with resolve, I shifted the frown to the usual smile and opened the doors to the banquet hall.

---

---

[Raw link](#)

TN: A bit harder to translate, this one... I had more free time today so I decided to translate this in the evening. For the next few days (during which I have a lot of time) I probably will translate one or two chapters a day. I hope you enjoy the translations.

Edit: Accidentally left a part out. Sorry about that. Nothing too important though.

# Idle Talk: My fiancé is acting strange (Angelica)

## Idle Talk: My fiancé is acting strange (Angelica)

I am Angelica, daughter of Duke Fontaine.

When I was eight years old, I was betrothed to the first prince Prince Kyle. From there on, as the future Empress, and to not shame Sir Kyle, I tried my best. It was a political betrothal, but I still admired the kind and hard-working Prince Kyle.

.....Maybe the feeling was something closer to love...

However, I knew that Sir Kyle only treated me as his future spouse did not harbour any particular feelings for me.

Still, it did not mean that I received worse treatment, but rather, I felt that I was receiving favourable treatment as a treasured fiancée.

I also knew that Sir Kyle was struggling under the heavy burdens placed on him, but I could not insensitively infringe on such private matters. I wished to share that heavy burden alongside him.

.  
. .  
.

In this country, we have an obligation to attend a boarding school from the age of fifteen for three years.

During these three years, we learn many things including socialising, but among all that it is considered most important to either 'solidify the bond with one's fiancé', or for those without, 'find someone that will be a future partner'.

As it was predetermined that I would enroll this year, I was also expecting to build up trust with Sir Kyle.

However, the Sir Kyle that came to escort me on the morning of ceremony felt somewhat like a different person.

Appearance, voice, intonation, none of these changed greatly, but the 'heat' filled in them? The emotion was different.

.....The smile directed towards me, different from the usual smile used in social gatherings, felt like it had a sweet sort of energy in it....  
That morning, I was toyed with.

Moreover... he kept touching me and the way he touched me was so...  
S, so! E, erotic, I daresay...  
Yet, I was surprised to find myself happy with that.

“....I’ll make sure to make up for this, so look forward to it.”

The words he whispered in my ears before leaving still rang in my ears, and the touch of his lips and his breath on my ears still made my heart flutter.  
At that time, my heart pounded so much—  
I ended up thinking to myself if Sir Kyle was trying to kill me.  
For some reason, I felt that I was being loved. I felt very happy.

.  
. .  
.

Shrouded in happiness, the entrance ceremony ended, and the escorted changed from Sir Kyle to dear brother. Then I went on to the welcoming party.

“You look happy, Angie.” (TN: Anju in raw, but I felt that Angie was more natural as a shortened form of Angelica.”

“Oh, fufufu. Is that so?”

To be found out immediately by dear brother, my happy feelings must have been showing on my face.

We went into the banquet hall and conversed with various acquaintances....  
Then I noticed it. That my childhood friend and intimate friend Jessica was not at the banquet hall, and that the person who was supposed escort her was escorting a stranger!!

“Dear brother.”

“Aah..... Angie, one moment, please.”

Drawing his attention to that, dear brother immediately realised and went out the banquet hall. He most likely went to find Jessica.

How did this happen?

Since I could not do anything if I did not have a clue, I decided to observe them for a while.

Jessica's fiancé is Sir Robert, an officer in the royal guard and the eldest son of the Marquess Redford.

He trained too much that his brains now might be made up of muscle as well, so he is little awkward, but he must know the minimal rules at least.

Was he maybe considering this to not be an official social gathering since this was school, or was that lady maybe newly adopted by the Marquess Redford? Seeing Sir Robert blushing and happily chatting away to the lady, I had a bad feeling.

As I continued to grow restless, dear brother returned with Jessica. It seemed that Jessica was standing in front the hall that the entrance ceremony was held in with a face about to cry.

Jessica came to my side, and when she spotted the two of them she started cry large teardrops.

".....Why? Why are you doing this to me..."

Her blue eyes wide open, Jessica murmured as she sobbed.

As dear brother kept watching over the crying Jessica, I ended up witnessing a malicious grin forming on his face.

When dear brother does this, there is no telling what he might do.

I should take action quickly!

I left Jessica to dear brother, and went to the couple in question.

"Good evening, Sir Robert."

"Hey, Angelica! You look beautiful again today."

"Thank you.... Uh, I don't recall seeing her before. Could you please introduce her to me?"

I put on a friendly smile, and requested to receive an introduction.

"Aah, of course. This is Michelle, daughter of Baron Rhône. It seems that she was taken in by her mother who was a mistress."

"Nice to meet you. I'm Michelle Rhône."

It was an awkward greeting.  
It seems that she did not receive proper education.  
Bobbed pink hair that had a fine luster and green eyes. A cute face with an innocent expression. A head and a half shorter than me maybe?  
Among men, I hear that there are many who like such women who bring out their protective urges.  
For me though, I think Jessica is much lovelier.....

“Pleased to make your acquaintance. My name is Angelica Fontaine. As fellow first year students, let us get along peacefully.”

I returned the greeting with an elegant smile, and turned to face Sir Robert.

“By the way, Sir Robert? May I inquire to the reason why you are escorting Miss Michelle, instead of Jessica?”

I asked him smiling stronger this time, and saw his facial expression shift as if was saying, ‘Ack, I forgot!!’

.....You can’t really have forgotten, have you?

I felt my smile thickening, almost into a smirk.

“Even if this may be school, I thought it was basic etiquette for a betrothed gentleman to escort his lady..... I suppose it works differently in the royal guard. Perhaps, have you trained so much that you could no longer comprehend the rules, by any chance?”

You musclehead!

“Th, that’s rude! Of course, that is the norm, but it is the duty of a knight to escort a lady who is quivering in foreign lands!”

Sir Robert turned bright red as he raised his voice.  
In such a place.... Is he an idiot? Because you raised your voice, we drew attention!

This musclehead really likes the word ‘knight’, doesn’t he? Although I think he misunderstands the meaning of the word.

“Your chivalry and courtesy are all fine, but from the point you abandoned you fiancée, you failed at both. If you wish to escort someone other than your betrothed without a special reason, I believe it would be best to do it after you

break the betrothal. Otherwise, you would end up bringing disgrace on both houses.”

I threw such words with a blank expression, and turned on my heels. I don't wish to be at the centre of attention, and I finished saying what I wanted to.

I didn't say it directly, but I meant to say that he was a 'musclehead' and a 'womaniser'. I wonder if he did understand the meaning though.

Soon afterwards, the three of us left the banquet hall, consoling Jessica on the way to the dormitory.

.....By tomorrow the rumours will spread.

Will I be hated by Sir Kyle?

Many times I have created commotions, but this time I thought of such a thing for the first time.

.

.

.

The next morning, as expected, the incident yesterday already became the topic of the day.

I thought that it would be best if I explained to him in person, so I prepared to go out a little earlier than usual.

I was about to contact him when a message came from him, so I quickly ran down to the entrance.

Like yesterday, Sir Kyle showed me his sweet smile. The rose I received that day felt as if I received his feelings, so I was very happy.

During the conversation we had later, Sir Kyle cared for me about the incident yesterday.

To me who made sarcastic remarks at his friends, there was not one word of scolding from him.

It's just that, the things afterwards, was just, so... e, embarrassing!

He hugged me tightly, his hand on my shoulder, and a shower of kisses begin on my profile. The smacking sounds I heard was opening the door to a strange new land....

I was surprised when Miss Michelle fell from the tree, but I was thankful that Sir Kyle stopped his actions.

Even then, almost as if he was doing it on purpose, left Miss Michelle out of his sight and worried only for me.

From his actions, words, gaze, from everything he did, I could feel the love directed at me.

I think Sir Kyle is acting strangely these days, but I gladly welcome this change.

---

---

[Raw link](#)

Angelica's maiden's heart is already conquered! It was fun translating this. So sweeeet~

As I translated, I realised that I'll have to do something about the honorifics. Currently, I localised them into english (ex. -san => Mr/Mrs/Miss, -sama => Sir/Lady, etc..), but please tell me if you would like the honorifics kept in original japanese.

|



## Chapter 6: It can only be said that nobles have performed their duty only if they could properly prepare in advance, is that not so?

**Chapter 6: It can only be said that nobles have performed their duty only if they could properly prepare in advance, is that not so?**

Author: Looking at the number of click and reviews, I found myself thinking “when did this happen!!” If I worry too much about your reviews I feel that I would not be able to finish writing safely so I decided not to read them until after I finished (lol)

---

At the orientation in the hall, I gave the first welcoming speech. From the rostrum, I could see hair colours of pink, purple, red, blue and yellow among many other shades, so I felt as if I was at a live concert of a punk band.

If I shouted, ‘Alright! Let’s do this!’ maybe they might just start headbanging.

Speaking words of greeting, while thinking such arbitrary thoughts, I ended up spotting the bitch.

Just by noticing her presence, I frowned.

If possible, I hope that she would not come into my sight..... Actually, I can’t see that thing.

Yes, I can’t see a thing.

I was brainwashing myself, but by thinking of the incident just before, it became hard to contain my rage.

If by any chance, Angelica was hurt, I won’t just forget about it!

Moreover, I had a good mood going, and she just had to disturb that! I hope she didn’t to that purpose, or did she?

.....Well, since Daniel was there, I know for sure with 100% confidence that she couldn’t have done that on purpose....

Since Daniel’s specs are on par with that ‘one hell of a butler’.

Still thinking useless thoughts, I managed to keep a smile on my face without fumbling over the words.

Barely finishing the speech with a smile, I decided to return to my room first. I have many things to check with Daniel as well as requests for him.

“Daniel, I have something to ask of you.”

“What is it, your highness?”

As soon as I spoke the moment I entered the room, Daniel appeared behind me without a sound.

Mm, I’m used to it now, you know?

“Angelica-sama did not have any noticeable wounds or bruises. She is merely staying in the room today to appease your highness.”

“Is that so.....”

That’s my Daniel, he knows exactly what I want.

Hearing that Angelica was unhurt, I was relieved.

I did check up on her myself, but I was still worried.

Sighing heavily, I sat down on the sofa and placed my hands on my eyes.

Then in front of me Daniel had already laid out tea.

.....Is he using magic?

Well, this must be Daniel’s quality, or so I think, and sip tea.

Leaving that aside, I turned my gaze towards Daniel.

“Indeed..... can you make a bouquet using pink tulips and gypsophila, and send it to Angelica? I don’t think I can visit her today, so tell her that I’m sending flowers instead.”

I first and foremost entrusted the highest priority business to him!

“Certainly, sir.”

“Can you also investigate Baron Rhône? I’m bothered as to why the Baron sent such an uneducated girl like that to school here.

“Certainly, sir.”

“Also.....”

I gestured to him to lend his ear, to which he gently leaned in.

“Soon..... I think there’ll be a commotion soon, so be prepared for that. And about fifteen days later..... and then..... so the relay to the related

divisions this information and tell them to make preparations.”

“Certainly, sir..... Your highness, it’s almost as if you are a prophet now.”

Based on my knowledge of the game, I decided to prepare in advance to the future events.

Thanks to that I was able to easily convey the information to Daniel, but.....

Daniel narrowed his eyes that had some unknown meaning to it, and grinned.

Scary!!

.

.

.

Today, there is a special curriculum for the new students.

Thus, we juniors and seniors didn’t have classes.

Therefore, I decided to take care of official businesses in my duty.

Even if this was a boarding school, I still cannot escape from work. Although no inspections came to school, and absurd amount of documents came for me four times a week.

It’s tiring to take care of these documents, but if I don’t take care of them now it’ll start piling up.

While reading the documents, I thought of the events in the game.

Today, there will be three more events today.

There are the events with Hughie, a freshman and the second son of a count, and Douglas, a year older than me, the eldest son of another count. Also there’s Brad, a teacher here.

Tomorrow there are the events with Henry, the third prince of the neighbouring kingdom, and Jackie, likewise from the neighbouring kingdom, the second son of a Duke. There’s also a mini-event with Robert in between, so the player had to make sure that there were chance meetings to raise the affection of the bachelors.

Though sometimes, there are lucky pervert situations in those events, greatly raising the affection, for example Robert.....

If you just look at this.....

.....Is this some sort of company manager's schedule? Or so I thought.

You really have to give it to Bitch that she is a hard worker, without a doubt!

I'll probably have two encounters. And one of them just has to be when I'm with Angelica.

So my objective tomorrow is to 'relieve Angelica's anxiety' and 'go to the correct place to encounter bitch'!

For Angelica, if she understands my feeling in the bouquet I sent, it should be alright.....

The roses are Angelica herself, and the bouquet is my feeling for her.

Every time my presence in her heart grows, I'll send flowers. So that she cannot escape my feelings that grow heavier every day.

.

After passingly finishing lunch, I finished all the work like a horse pulling a wagon and returned to my room.

For the next two days, I don't have any work, so I can spend all my time for her now!

In the game, Kyle said some cheesy thing like "my time with you is more important than work," but to me it just sounded like a poor excuse of a useless man.

Well if you think about his position, he shouldn't really be saying that, right? If it was Bitch then it might work, but Angelica would be disgusted by such behaviour.

I want to always look cool in front her, so I will not compromise any effort on that!

.

I want to be always admired by her. Furthermore, I want to be loved by her.

---

Author: Sebastian, huh? (lol)

---

---

[Raw link](#)

TN:

I woke up early today so I worked on this.

It seemed like many preferred the original Japanese honorifics so I kept it in this time... only to see that there was only one in this

It's not a permanent change yet, I'm still deliberating between the two. Once that's settled, I'll edit all the previous translations as well. Don't feel bad, not localising the honorifics actually saves me work

I hope my writing skills will suffice in keeping the high society feel

Oh and, since there are author's comments as well, the author's comments are after one horizontal line, and my comments will be after two horizontal lines.

|

## Chapter 07: My accomplice brother-in-law

### Chapter 07: My accomplice brother-in-law

The next morning, while I was having breakfast, Louis came for me.

“Good morning, Kyle. Do you mind sharing the table?”

“Good morning. I don’t mind but..... is there something you’d like to discuss?”

Louis’s smiling face was scary, so I assumed that it was because of that incident.

When I approved Louis’s request, his butler started setting the meal. Daniel, like always, used his magic to bring out tea.

“Looking at that face, you must know what I want, eh?”

After the meals were prepared and the butlers hid their presences, Louis asked that while thickening his smile.

In that smile, the meaning of ‘you know what happens if you refuse, right?’ was included.

His face is indeed beautiful, so it is doubly overwhelming. Truly like the demon king (TN: Maou) himself.

.....Well, although I’m likely to be the same myself.....

If I were in his shoes, I would have thought the same, so I’ll cooperate. Actually, I already had made my moves.

So, Louis will have to be accomplice.

Even if I ask Daniel to carry out my plans, it’s hard strategising on my own.

If Louis helps, then the speed will increase greatly.

So I make a devilish grin.

“It’s about the future sister-in-law, is it not?”

Bringing up the matter about Jessica in a roundabout way, I read Louis’s face. Louis saw that I was had a dark aura in my smile, but he seemed to understand.

“.....Hm..... So, what to you want me to do, future brother-in-law?”

Louis made a satisfied smile.

.

Since we couldn't talk about the details at a public place, we decided to meet at my office after breakfast. Then we chatted about mundane things while finishing breakfast.

As to why I chose my office instead of my room, it was because I am less likely to be disturbed in my office.

It's not like I'm going to make him help with work, you know?

"Hey, you two. What kind of secret conversation are you two having so early in the morning? Let me in too."

See, a disturbance.

Robert sent an unsightly wink. He still behaves annoyingly, doesn't he?

Robert's brain is made of muscle, so he doesn't know for whom Louis has feelings for.

He doesn't know why Louis does not yet have a fiancée, nor how he feels.

Furthermore, unlike a proper noble, he does not know how to read the mood.

Robert..... Will he be fine in the royal guard?

Making him inherit a noble House of a marquess, I don't know what they're thinking.

Just by Robert coming, the atmosphere is cooling to be like Antarctica, yet the culprit has no idea why.

For me, I wouldn't even be able to look straight at Louis!

Anyone! Does anyone have a warm drink!?

When I silently sent a rescue signal, Daniel delicately filled my cup again.

You're a psychic. I can tell.

I sipped the tea and took a breath. The cold atmosphere was starting to return normal, and I returned my gaze towards Robert.

"Good morning, Robert. Would you like to help with our work as well? That would be nice since there's just so much to do."

Having managed to revive with the warm tea Daniel just gave me, I smiled at Robert.

Since the musclehead Robert would never help with office work, it would be a

great excuse to refuse.

“Work!?!..... I refuse. I can’t ending up increasing the workload, you know!”

Sure enough, Robert became restless, said something along the line of ‘Ah, I had something to do!’ and ran away.

Thanks to him leaving, the atmosphere returned to normal, as well as Louis’s smile, and so went to my office.

Gimme a break.

.

After breakfast, we discussed shortly about our future prospects and decided to share information even for a short time everyday.

I think I prepared pretty well for the encounters with Bitch today! Actually I would have liked to meet with Angelica, but since there was a chance that an event would happen so I gave up while sobbing. I will have the opportunity to visit after school, but for now I have no plans to go over there.

After the classes were over, I invited Angelica to an afternoon tea time. It was me trying to make up for refusing her lunch invitation today, as well as me aiming for a date.

As soon as I received her approval, I arranged for it to be held at a different courtyard from yesterday.

The courtyard yesterday consisted of grass and trees, so it really felt like it was a place of rest, but today’s courtyard had an elegance like that of an English garden properly cared for.

It feels like a place for couple.

I asked for six pink rose wrapped cutely, and head for the courtyard.

Aah, I can finally meet her..... Seeing that I think that when I meet her every day, I think I have some problems. Well I don’t have any second thoughts on that though.....

As I waited at the courtyard, Angelica came soon afterwards. Because of the rule that ‘everyone is equal irrespective of rank in school’ we are obligated to wear uniforms outside of our rooms, but just by the fact that Angelica is wearing it, it feels like a different clothing altogether.



“Welcome, Angelica.”

“Thank you for your invitation, Kyle-sama. I must also thank you for the splendid bouquet yesterday.

Blushing, Angelica was looking at me happily as if she was seeing a quaint object.

Can I hug you, please?

“Then, here..... These are my feelings for you.”

No, I mustn't. Regaining my composure, I gave her today's flowers.

“!..... Thank... you... very much...”

After seeing the flowers, she widened her blue eyes in surprise and smiled at me with that looked blissful.

Wait a second! What was that just then!

Without realising it, I hid my mouth with my hand and turned my face away.

“Your highness, tea is prepared. Please take your seat.”

“Ahh, of course.”

I heard something about to break inside of me, the psychic Daniel stopped that from happening.

Thank you, Daniel. (TN: Thank you in raw as well, not sure how to translate this.)

I ordered to pull up a chair for Angelica, then I took a sit across from a her. Afterwards, hearing things about her newly begun school life, the time passed peacefully.

“Hey, Kyle, Angelica! What a coincidence!”

The thing that put a damper on our date was, still shooting out unsightly winks, the musclehead Robert.

---

---

I went out for most of day, so I could only start translating this chapter from the evening. Since it was the weekend, I would have liked to translate more, but oh well. This will be all for today.

But good news! Tomorrow is a national holiday in Korea, so I might translate

lots tomorrow

I

## Chapter 08: Dates always have disturbances.....

### Chapter 08: Dates always have disturbances.....

I knew in advance that we would meet today.

However, the location was different. In the game, it would have been in the hallway in front of the office. As I knew that in advance, I took care of all my work yesterday to avoid this, and chose the courtyard furthest away from that place, and yet this happens!

Why did you come all the way over here!? In addition with such amount, too!!

I unconsciously stared at the four who could not read the mood — Robert, Douglas, Hughie and Bitch — with a blank expression.

You interrupted my oasis time. You want me to crush you, right?

I realised I was building up a murderous look in my eyes. Right now, I was wearing my rage around me.

Since Douglas knew me for a long time, he panicked when he saw my expressions, but the three behind him did not realise a thing. Because of that, my frustration built up even further!

What do you want!?

I was just about to coax Angelica, but you just had to interrupt!

I carry out various patterns of revenge in my head. I examined which would be the most effective.

I could also feel my face was twisting into horrible expression.

But then, someone gently patted my shoulder. It was Daniel.

When I furtively took a look, he was slowly shaking his head..... Calm down, me.

I sighed once, and made the usual smile.

“Hey..... Quite the unusual combination, eh? What about Jessica and April?”

I was sarcastically hinting that betrothed people should not approach other girls, but Robert was not shaken up at all. ‘Ahh, it’s different,’ he responded coolly with a smile.

Hughie awkwardly averted the gaze of his orange eyes, and Douglas — whose

fiancée died last year due to disease — hid his eyes with one hand and scratched his green-haired head.

“So, do you some business?”

I know what you’re going to say, so I’ll give you attention. I want get over with this charade quickly and play with Angelica.

“Ahh! Michelle wanted to thank you herself, so we were all looking for you! Come on, Michelle!”

Robert gleefully explained and pushed Bitch over towards us. Bitch locked her fingers in front her chest and twiddled her fingers in hesitation. Do you mind talking already? And, quickly disappear from my sight!

“.....thank me?”

“Yes! Thank you for breaking the fall and catching me yesterday!! Thanks to you, I was unhurt! Also, sorry for surprising you with that!”

While I maintained my smile and listened on, Bitch said that and bowed. Only to me!!

I think I’m about to frown. Suppressing that, my face grows ever darker.

In the game, Kyle would say, ‘What an interesting child,’ which raised his affection, but for me you’re just picking a fight, you know?

Why would Kyle’s affection increase in this encounter!? There’s a threshold for bearing these things!

“...You don’t really need to thank me, but, I’d like you to properly apologise to Angelica, you see?”

I was at my limits but I managed to say that with a soft voice and smile.

“Ah! Sorry! — — —Angelica-san, I’m sorry for yesterday! Were you hurt anywhere?”

Bringing both hands to her hand as if she just realised, she apologised to Angelica panicking.

Every action looks like a farce.

Is it because I only have animosity for her?

When I turned my gaze towards Angelica, she too must have been displeased

as well. She was making a smile just like her brother's.

Mm, that side of you is cute as well.

My frustration lifted in an instant.

Truly, it's Angelica magic.

"Please don't trouble yourself over it. I did not receive any injuries."

"Thank goodness! I was so worried about that!!"

I felt as if I could almost hear her go 'hah~' as Bitch smiled. Then, I realised her eyes were looking at the object on the table.

"That flower..... it's very pretty"

I could tell that she wanted it even without having to read between the lines.

"Pretty, is it not? I received it from Kyle-sama."

Angelica responded as if she didn't realise Bitch's feeling, but she looked very unpleasant.

And of course, Robert could not read the mood.

"Well there are many flowers, so why not share one? It's okay, right, Kyle?"

Of course it's not!

In a sense, he really doesn't change, does he!?

Angelica too was almost reaching her limit, twitching her eyebrows rapidly. I also don't want to see my smiling face. It probably became very scary. Still, I have to take care of this here, or else Angelica will explode in frustration.....

Breathing in and out many times and calming myself, I talked to them with a smile (which may have been twitching).

"I can't possibly do that. These flowers are my feelings toward her, so even one less flower would degrade its meaning..."

"Is that so?"

"Yes. Also, the receiver would feel happier if it's from the person they like."

"Oh right!"

Robert is indeed an idiot.....

Saying, "I'll give you the same flower" or something. For a betrothed man to say

that to someone other than his fiancée.....

Furthermore, doing that in front of her friend.....

How much of an idiot are you!?

Furtively stealing a look at Angelica, she was blushing bright red and was lowering her head. Looking at her, she doesn't seem to have heard Robert's statement.

Her irritation also seemed to have stopped, as was no longer twitching her eyebrows.

Because she understood my flowers' meaning, did she get embarrassed?

In the game, the event would have ended with a cynical remark from Angelica, but... today was alright.

Hm. Then, should I say it for her?

"Hm, you know that there's etiquette class in school, right? If you want, you can apply for extra classes, you see?"

For you lot who do not know what courtesy means, you should get some manners knocked into your head!

To my nasty remark, Hughie's and Douglas's face reddened.

But it seems like it didn't work on Robert and Bitch, since they were making a face that looked as if was saying 'So? Eh, what is it?'

.....It must be easy being an idiot.

.

After the four went away, as I was taking stroll in the garden to refresh myself, I realised I needed to discipline my mind more, so I felt like purifying myself by sitting beneath a waterfall.....

Angelica was just that cute, but I won't show that to anyone else.

---

In the language of flowers, these are the meanings:

One flower ... fell in love at first sight.

Six flowers ... madly in love with you.

Pink tulip ... true love

Gypsophila ... purity

---

---

[Raw link](#)

I don't know much about flowers, but that's so sweet.

Recently I picked up two web novels, one called 'Honzuki no Gekokujou *Shisho Ni Naru Tame Ni Shudan wo Erande iraremasen* ' and another called 'Tsumi Kake Tensei Ryoushu no Kaikaku'. Both are reincarnation novels, but unlike most that involve fighting, these are more focused on economic/technological development and politics, so I really liked them. I finished about one third for both of them. I am thinking of translating them, but not right now until I'm finished with this beauty.

I

# Idle Talk: The Sweet Terror (Angelica)

## Idle Talk: The Sweet Terror (Angelica)

TN: Prepare insulin injections everyone.

---

---

After the noisy four left, Kyle-sama suggested to take a stroll in the garden.

I offered my hand, to which he flowingly accepted and escorted me. To that, Kyle-sama gleamed his emerald green eyes towards me in a soft smile. This garden, even amongst all the gardens in school, has received lots of love from the garden, with many different types of roses blooming beautifully. Thus, it is a popular place for students to go on dates.

In such a wonderful place, taking a stroll with just the two of us.....

I'm so happy..... and so embarrassed..... Also, thinking about the meaning of the flowers he sent me, I don't think I can look straight at Kyle-sama's face. Kyle-sama would discover my unsightly face, and my trembling pupils..... However, I have no idea what sort of emotion I am feeling now. I do not think it's displeasure, at least.

"I wonder what kind of flower you like, Angelica? I want to reference it the next time I send flowers."

While I was examining a slightly strange-looking rose, he suddenly asked. When Kyle-sama looked at me with a sweet gaze, I thought of the flowers I received over the past few days. The pink rose I received just before. Just thinking of its meaning, I can't help but feel a tug at my heart.

"Before, I like lilies the best, but if it's any flower with Kyle-sama's feelings in it everything is fine."

"———Uggh!!"

When I replied so while staring vacantly at his sweetly smiling face, his emerald green eyes slightly widened, and his hand gripped a little tighter around mine.

I wonder what happened?



As I thought that, Kyle-sama closed his eyes for a moment. Then, he returned to the usual kind and sweet he sent to me over the past few days. Just that, it felt like the mood around him changed a bit. That terrible mood seemed to hasten the beating of my heart.

“Then, I would have to put more feeling into the flowers, hm?”

Even though he continued to charm me with his smilee as sweet as honey, he made a statement that teased me even further. And then,

“.....Then, not a long time later, there won’t be any flowers that would be able to hold feelings. When that happens..... Can I ask you to receive my feelings directly?”

Staring at me with a sweet piercing gaze, he pulled my hand towards him with that statement, and kissed my hand over the gloves.

In Kyle-sama’s eyes, I felt as if there was something burning in there.....

I could not help but feel anxiety and anticipation from the heat.

I do not why it is so, but I feel like I would become a different person when I figured out why.

When I unconsciously lowered my head, I heard a small chuckle, and was urged to walk on.

We discussed many things while walking, but non on them entered my head. Even though I’m taking a walk with Kyle-sama.....

I could not help but stare at the dashing Kyle-sama.

As ungraceful and rude it is, I could only stare at him. I was aware of these eyes getting moist, but whatever should I do.....?

Every time our eyes meet, Kyle-sama’s free hand sways slightly, and his other hand clasps tightly around mine. Every time that happened, I panicked at myself who was thinking ‘I want to me hugged.’

I felt like such a shameless woman.

If Kyle-sama finds out, I will be hated.....!

However, ignoring my will, my emotions and my body craved for Kyle-sama.

By the time we arrived at a gazebo, the atmosphere surrounding Kyle-sama was thick with breathtaking sweetness, that I was taken over by the sweet terror.

I did not wish to be hated, yet I could not stop this craving for him.  
If I put him in my sight, I felt that I would not be able to stop myself, so I was averting my gaze from him.....

“Angelica.....”

To Kyle-sama’s words, I unwittingly turned my gaze towards him.  
It was only that my name was called, but I slowly closed my eyes. As if I was begging for a kiss.....

“—————Uggh!!!”

I heard him breath in, and approach my face. Yet, it did not touch my lips, but made a soft smacking sound on my forehead and left.....

“.....Ahh.....”

As if I was unsatisfied, I involuntarily let out such a sound.  
Surprised at my own voice, I widened my eyes and quickly faced downwards to hide my face.

Looking downwards, I could see the arm hanging down from Kyle-sama’s body.....

His hands were gripped tightly and trembling.....?

I wonder what happened??

Pondering that, I forgot the embarrassment I just felt and looked up at Kyle-sama. Meeting my gaze, he laughed sheepishly.

“Angelica, you’re quite the devil.....”

Kyle-sama muttered something, but I could not hear it.  
So I stared at him and tilted my head in confusion..... Only to be taken by surprise with a sweet smile.

Really, I wonder what he said? It’s worrisome, but if he smiles like that I cannot muster up the courage to ask.

Something still tugged at my mind, but I had to give it up.

Then I was pulled along back to where we were having tea.....  
But I felt like I was above the clouds, my feet not finding solid ground.  
I just could not help but think that this was a dream.....

On my way, I could only think of this..... What if Kyle-sama's sweet gaze and actions were but a dream..... I was terrified at this notion. If this really is a dream, I hope would never wake up..... Still, I wished confirm that this was not a dream, so over and over again I looked at Kyle-sama, to which he always showed me a sweet smile. With that, I was somewhat able to regain composure.

---

---



I received a heart attack while doing this.

# Chapter 09: Is this what calm before the storm feels like?

## Chapter 09: Is this what calm before the storm feels like?

Today's Angelica was very cute. Just by thinking about her, I could feel something boiling inside me.

"Kyle-sama, your face, sir....." (TN: Daniel usually says 'Your Highness,' but he used this just this time)

As I recalled my time with her countless times, Daniel looked at me as if he was looking at a pitiful child.

Making the usual expressionless Daniel wear an expression like that..... What kind of face am I making now?

I cover my face with my hand and turn away from him.

"Is that so?"

"I understand how you feel, sir, but you are gleaming too much. If you don't do something about that overflowing pheromone, you'll soon be feared. She's just an innocent girl."

I was scolded by Daniel!

Even for the usually quiet Daniel to say this, I must be in a really strange state. Still, I also have my excuses, you know?

"Still..... I don't think I overstepped my bounds....."

I did caress her hair and hug her, but I never kissed her on the lips. I did kiss on other places, but it's just lightly touching my lips.

It's probably of the level of middle schoolers, right? Well, I don't know what middle schoolers these days though.....

I'm already stopping myself from hugging her, what more do you want?

The dissatisfaction must have shown on my face, for Daniel was making a face that looked like it was saying 'it can't be helped.'

I remember making that face a lot when I was little. As an older brother that is.....

Stop! Stop looking at me like that!!  
It's as if I'm pestering you!  
I'm saying an obvious opinion as 'a boy my age,' you know? Don't treat me like a helpless kid!

However, I had to accept what Daniel said afterwards.

"I believe that because you repressed your emotions only with willpower your pheromones became stronger, sir."

I see..... I must have taken Angelica aback.....  
It's no surprise that she was scared.  
I really should control myself..... I was desperately bearing it all, but if scare her because of it, that won't do at all.

"Later, when you have impulses, I advise you to think of disagreeable tasks to quickly cool your head, sir."

"Alright. I'll try to cope with it."

To my thoughts, Daniel gave me a useful advice.  
I am willing to accept everything Angelica throws at me, but there's no meaning if she ends up getting scared.  
Let's get her accustomed to me little by little.

"Hm, hm," said I, as I planned my future meetings, but Daniel smiled wryly towards me.

Really, stop looking at me like an unfortunate child! It hurt quite a bit, you know!!

.  
.  
.

So far, my plan was progressing smoothly.

Time to time, Hughie and Douglas showed signs of ignoring the reality, so I sometimes broke the hard truth to them. To Hughie, I tell him to not shame his fiancée..... For now, I don't see any opposition to it.

If, even then, they are thinking of stuff like 'I'll sacrifice everything for you,' I'll

have to respond as one of the leaders of this country.

As a 'friend', the best I can do is to give candid advice. From an official perspective, I will have to give up if they don't change their mindset.

The time I can wait for them to correct themselves is when we're still in school. Not as the prince, but as a fellow 'student.'

So if there is no change in them in the meantime, I will have to cut them off. As they are now, they only harm the country. We can't have such people lead the country.

I hope they quickly realise that and fix themselves.....

.....As for Robert... Um, I'll just leave him alone.

It's not possible for me to make him understand.

Like trying to learn Robert language, it's too much work.

There also..... Louis's wish.

I, instead of choosing the musclehead, would rather respect the wishes of my future brother-in-law.

Also, I quickly gave up on the notion of avoiding Bitch. Maybe it's because this is a game, but whatever I do I'm destined to encounter her in a mini-event. If I try to rashly avoid her, then it actually becomes even more complicated with more people involved.

Like that afternoon tea time with Angelica.

Therefore, instead of avoiding her, I decided to destroy all the flags. Whatever Bitch does, I will refuse her like a devil.

Unfortunately, there was a situation where the two of us talked alone in the English garden. That in itself was tough, but then she had to say something with her sympathising eyes.

"Kyle-sama, even when you must be in pain with all the burden on you, you still respond to everyone with a smile..... But then, some day you will reach the limit..... You don't have to force yourself to smile in front of me, at least. I would be happier that way."

Seeing her speak as if she knew me. I was truly infuriated.

Swans may look elegant on the water, but beneath the surface, they desperately wade their feet to not sink.

But it's fine if what everyone sees is the elegant side. At least that's what I think. Even if others know that I am trying desperately, I had no plans to advertise that, yet she just took the needless trouble to uncover that and sympathised with me, how humiliating!

Kyle in the game seemed to want for this, but for me, this was just outrageous. While I'm trying desperately to hide that fact, yet hearing someone just exposing it and sympathising.....

Angelica and Louis too understand my pain. But, they never say 'I know you're suffering,' and give me help while subtly saying that I am exerting myself.

I think that is what it means to truly worry for someone.

Saying 'I know' like Michelle but not taking action is just hypocrisy. Plus, that isn't really what you say to someone you're not very friendly with, is it?

(TN: Gasp! He said Michelle!)

In response, I decided to gratefully take Bitch up on the offer. For Bitch, I quit forcing myself to smile.

Isn't it really a great refresher, relieving stress? Truly, this is a blessing in disguise!

Regarding this turn of events, though, Robert who could not read the mood said, "What happened Kyle? You shouldn't be making such a face to a girl!" while adding in a sigh.

Then, when I said, "She said that it is better when I don't smile," he cleanly understood.

Really..... You.....

It seemed like Angelica was criticising Bitch when I wasn't with her. However, unlike the game, there was no sign of madness from envy. My overly heavy affection probably erased any chance of jealousy.

Also, Angelica is not spitting anything extreme, but just stating the truth matter-of-factly, so there were no bad rumours of her.

Things were progressing delightfully. If I just get over today's event, everything will be wrapped up today.

.

To make a final decision, I contacted Louis.

---

---

---

Here's another one. I'm not sure if I can do more though. For the moment, enjoy!

I



# Chapter 10: As I thought, Bitch's upbringing is weird.

## Chapter 10: As I thought, Bitch's upbringing is weird.

Author: Time for explanations.

---

Like always, I rendezvoused with Louis at my office. In addition, he helped with work!

It's not as if I couldn't do the work by myself, but since Louis is such a superb worker, I made quite the progress.

"Sorry, Louis..... You really saved me there."

Calling him to discuss out plans, and then asking him to help with work..... I do think badly of this.

.....I, it's not like as if I left work, you know? New work just arrived, you know!? I really do think badly of this!

"It's alright. I'm actually surprised that you took care of all this work by yourself until now....."

But my kind future brother-in-law, like the easy and composed man he is, accepted my apology leisurely.  
So I got excited.

"If you think so, could you come every time?"

"If our plan this time works out well, I can help every day."

I was joking, but he gladly accepted.  
The scheming yet kind future brother-in-law really does seem like he is going to help out.  
Then, I really have to make the plan work!

.

After we finished work, we first discussed the current situation before we made our final decision.  
First is the trend in their movements.....

Sure enough, a wonderful reverse-harem had formed with Bitch at the centre.

Without worrying about how others think, they were seen chatting and giggling flirtatiously at the courtyards. Also, the six of them, even in public, were giving gifts while kneeling down to draw Bitch's attention.

What was worse, when there was almost a fight over bitch, it was reported that one could hear the legendary 'Stop! Don't fight over me!' ..... When I heard that, even I had a headache.....

Amongst the six of them, the foreigners Henry and Jackie are not related to me so I don't mind what they do. However, it's problematic for the other four, you see?

First, the teacher!

Don't lay your hands on a student so shamelessly! Does he not know the dignity of a school that even royalty attend?

Before he creates trouble, he should either fix his mentality or leave the school.....

But this is 'school.' It's not a place an imperial prince should abuse his power. In addition, this place is different from modern Japan. There is no taboo on 'teacher-student relationships' here. The family and the stability of the House is more prioritised here.

As long as one keeps the minimal rules, some degree of free romance is allowed. ....For him, I'll continue to observe him, and then I'll ask the school to do something about him.....

Next, Hughie!

I'm pretty I told him already? If he wants to have a relationship, take care of the problem with his fiancée already. Don't just go flirt with Bitch!

I hear that his fiancée is crying every day. No surprise there. She is getting mocked as an 'older woman who lost her fiancé to a younger girl'.

It has only been two weeks since school started again. She probably isn't coping with this fast turn of events.

I'll have to take care of him sometime. If he doesn't change even then, I'll have to find her a new happiness.

And then, Douglas.....

Um, whatchamacallit, you're just being taken advantage of your wound.....

Don't you think you look pitiful when you're with bitch? I didn't think that you

were satisfied just being a sideline character?

Do you not realise how others see you.....?

Or have even lost sight of your surroundings?

Finally, Robert.....

.....Um, ah..., I can't help you. You're an idiot anyways.....

You don't deserve Jessica. Robert's parents probably wanted her to support him, but his level of idiocy far exceeds the level a sixteen-year-old girl could possibly tolerate.

There's no girl who would be able to put up with that much neglect.

Additionally..... Louis has already encircled Jessica. The moment the betrothal is broken, the Jessica will be conquered by Louis.

However, the strange thing is, that the reverse-harem formed quicker than in the game.

Douglas was notorious for being such a difficult character to conquer. Yet when conquered, he was so tsundere that his popularity entered the top 3 in the game polls.

Hughie and Henry too took a long time.....

.....Could it be that..... I am the cause of this?

Because I treated Bitch coldly, did everyone go full 'poor bitch', or that the bitch went 'the more rejected I am, the more passionate I get'?

.....Nope, I'm just imagining things!

I don't have anything to do with it!!

"I'm worried about them, but what about the investigation into her?"

While thinking useless stuff, Louis asked about Bitch.

That's right. I need to properly tell him about that.

I need his opinion as the future advisor.

Thus, I promptly laid out the information I got from Daniel.

.

Bitch was born between the baron and a concubine. As the bastard child she is, there was no way that the lawful wife would permit the child, so the baron had been hiding her at a villa in the countryside far away from the capital. For some reason, Bitch was always quite popular with men, and by the age of

ten there were many problems surrounding her regarding men. As the years went by, the problems intensified, yet she did not have many malice (I think this is strange!), so there were many who tried to confess to her yet did not do so. However, when bitch turned fifteen, a big problem occurred.

The second son of the baron (who was at that time twelve years old) visited the villa to recuperate from a disease.

Of course, he fell in love with her. Then the eldest son (fourteen years old) visited his little brother, and fell in love with Bitch.

.....Ultimately, brothers fought each other over their own half-sister.

Thinking that this was problematic, he planned to enrol Bitch to school to find a husband.

He quickly called her over (while the two brothers spent their time until bitch enrolled in school at the villa) and gave her the minimum education (which is still very lacking) and sent her away to school.

He probably knew that then the boys will flock to her, but he probably didn't expect nobles to abandon their fiancées and fall madly in love with Bitch.

“This kind of bomb, I really wish he would have taken care of it himself... Well, it might be good for me though.”

“Truly..... won't the nobles from the neighbouring country take her away?”

“.....Indeed, I almost want to plead them to.”

We lock our eyes, and sigh heavily.

---

---

Bitch's setting is still in progress, but pretty good. And they're still chaste.

---

---

Woah, bitch, bugger, that's some crazy stuff. Even though it could have been a holy Xwedodah union, I don't approve of this, not at all.

# Chapter 11: Don't make an enemy of him!

## Chapter 11: Don't make an enemy of him!

Just between us.....

Frankly, regarding the case about Robert and Jessica, it's already mostly concluded. I called over the butlers of both houses, and asked them to report the current situation to their houses. In addition, I conveyed my opinion to my parents (the emperor and the empress) to mediate between the two families. Because of that, I received more documents to take care of, but if it's for my cute Angelica and my friend this is nothing.

If, around noon today, the 'annulment of betrothal' event does not happen, the conflict will be 'resolved' peacefully by the imperial family. At the original event, Jessica's family, House Rowling decided to break the betrothal.

I told this to Jessica as well.

At first, she was shocked, wanting to continue her relationship with Robert, but now, she looked resigned seeing Robert like that every day.

Recently, the four of us, Louis, Angelica, Jessica and I spend time together a lot. I would much prefer being alone with Angelica, but I couldn't possibly leave Jessica alone as she is now.

It was also not a possibility to leave her alone with Louis. If I did so, then Jessica who is still betrothed to Robert will be called a "slut" as well.

Thus, it would look most natural for the four of us to be together.

Angelica and I are engaged, and she is also friends with Jessica. Louis is my future brother-in-law as well.....

Most importantly, Angelica wanted this situation as well. (This is important!)

.

Recently, I could feel Kyle's memory fusing into mine. With my opinions as the base, Kyle's opinions on them were slowly adding on to them.

I was feeling trust and friendship towards Louis. I was worried about my musclehead friend Robert and could not bring myself to hate him. I was very worried about Douglas. I felt as if I was looking at an unfortunate little brother

when I looked at Hughie. I regarded Jessica like a little sister.

When I was playing the game, I didn't care a bit about whatever happens to them, but I wanted to do all I can for them.  
So I try to fix the situation, yet they just.....

My rage pointed towards Bitch even more. If you could see the parameters it would have been scary, you know? There would have been no lower limit. The screen would be deep blue. Heading straight for the bad ending.

I lost my cool. I can't seem to be able to control myself when it comes to badmouthing Bitch.  
Going back... to what I was saying.

As for Angelica, Kyle originally seemed to think of her like a little sister... yet he at the same time envied her slightly.  
If she showed that she was struggling, then Kyle might have said 'let's do our best together' .....

But she kept working hard without complaining even a bit. She kept hiding it and Kyle grew more envious of that strong Angelica.  
I could now tell that Bitch took advantage this to drive a wedge between the two of them.

But now, I am Kyle! I never felt envious of Angelica. I only think her of as cute!  
There's no way I'll let Bitch have her way!!

By learning more about Kyle's memories, my admiration towards Angelica strengthened. Other than that, my own feelings overwrote anything else to become even stronger love.  
Making me love her more, what is she planning to do with me?  
.....Angelica..... Scary!

.

Having finished working and scheming, she were walking a little quickly towards where Angelica and Jessica were.

Yet, no matter how hurried, one must not forget elegance.

It's after school, yet the hallways are still crowded. Considering my position, I have to be careful of how others think.

"I think Robert is reaching his limit..... Since my dear little sister is always

chastising him.”

Walking elegantly, he said something venomous so casually as if he was talking about the weather.

Going ‘fufut’, his smile grows sinister.

“.....Louis, you wish for Jessica’s family to break the betrothal, right?”

“Of course? .....That bastard, he made a complete fool of Jessica? As idiotic as he may be, there’s a limit. ——He was kissing with that girl at a garden right in front of Jessica, you know? .....I really wanted to kill him back then.

Saying that, Louis’s expression turned grim. Terrifying, Louis.

Robert..... as for you... You’re beyond help now. You’re too much of an idiot.....

Still angry at the recalling such a thing, Louis turned to me, and asked,

“If you were in my shoes..... What would you do?”

Smiling as if he was testing me.

Hm.

If Angelica became heart-broken in front of me.

“.....I won’t be able to forgive the perpetrator. I’ll drive him into a corner and make him regret making an enemy of me forever, that death would have been a better option.....”

I was smiling, but it probably was a sinister one like a demon king.

Satisfied at my answer, Louis smiled and said, ‘Right?’. That smile implied, ‘If you understand, don’t get in my way, or else.....’

There’s no way I would get in the way of someone so scary.....

So, I smiled in approval.

Our smile were black with ill intent, yet for the ladies it must have been a very breathtaking scene.

I could hear people sigh in awe here and there.

But, Robert..... To make an enemy of someone who you should never make an enemy of.....

Rest in peace.

By the time we arrived at the dining hall, there seemed to be some commotion inside.

Wait?  
Could it be!?

Feeling an ominous hunch, we tried to force our way through the crowd. Yet, the crowd was so thick it was hard to.

“I mean! If you are indeed a noble, why do you not think before you act! It’s unsightly!!”

I could hear an unusually upset voice from the usually calm Angelica. I could also hear Jessica weeping.

This is.....!  
The event already started!!  
Wasn’t it supposed to begin with Kyle in the game!?

“What do you mean unsightly! I love Michelle, not Jessica! For love, I would gladly————”

Panicking, I tried to quickly wade through the crowd, but I couldn’t make it. Robert was about to say that line.  
Angelica held up her fan————

Ba—————ng!!!!

A thunderous sound rung out through the dining hall.  
Surprised, Angelica froze in place, still holding her fan up in the air.

Then, where was the noise from.....?

The crowd split left and right.  
At the newly vacated space, there was a toppled table and————

“Oh, sorry? I seem to have knocked the table over.”

Louis, who was making the most beautiful smile I ever saw.



# Chapter 12: I made them annul the betrothal

## Chapter 12: I made them annul the betrothal

Standing next to the toppled table, Louis was emitting a threatening aura with his demonic smile. His level of anger might be ‘Kamchatka fire~’, or something? (TN: He’s referring to [this](#))

If I act rashly here, I might become his target of rage.

“Angelica, Robert, what’s wrong? Making such a loud noise.”

Louis now is in ‘do not disturb’ state.

So, diverting Louis’s glare, I talked to Angelica and Robert. I approached them putting on my usual mild smile.

Angelica regained her cool, looking at me. With a alarmed expression on her face, she lowered her arm and elegantly hid the fan behind her back.

I think I’m already beyond saving, thinking that that side of her is cute as well. I slowly took my place at her side, blocking other people’s sight aimed at her. Then I softly grabbed her hand.

“I’m sorry I wasn’t by your side..... Because of that... you had to do this.....”

I conveyed my feelings of regret to her in a soft voice that only she could hear. Hearing this, Angelica started looking like as if she was about to cry. Her hand, still holding the fan, was trembling.

It must have been scary.....

No matter how much of a staunch character she has, Angelica is still a girl. Facing this musclehead, there’s no way she would not be scared.

Holding her hand, I moved slightly to hide her from Robert’s sight.

“Robert, shall we have a slow talk? This place is unfit..... How about my office?”

Not yet calmed down, Robert snorted and nodded yes. He doesn’t say it directly but his face shows that he has so much things to complain about. Actually....., should I say that he has grown enough to not let that spill? But yet.....

Robert was making a face as if it was saying 'anytime!' Robert, you...  
I let out a sigh.

"It's my fault! Please do not criticise Robert-sama! I'm the one who should be criticised!"

Bitch spread out her arms and stood in front of Robert as if to shield him. Robert for some reason, seemingly impressed by her, was murmuring 'Michelle....., you.....'  
What can I say now.....  
Please read the mood.

Ah—.....  
Bitch's personality is judged to be 'positive, hard-working, persevering and postive', right?  
Isn't this actually more like 'positive (no ill intent?), hard-working (which I can accept), persevering (super-optimistic) and positive (rushing in headlong misunderstanding things)?  
There's no way she could read the mood. Truly a martian. The way of life is different from the base.  
.....I kinda understand.

But I have to work harder here! It's a hard task of mediating between boys and girls, but I'll make it work!!  
Psyching myself up, I dropped the usual smile and looked at Bitch.

"It's fine. It's not related with you, so you will just be a nuisance. Do you understand what I am saying?"

I told her straight up in a cold tone. If I beat around the bush, she will interpret it however she likes.  
I'm still not sure if she did understand.  
Maybe Bitch has some communication disability, since I can't seem to get through to her.

"You're lying! You're trying to criticise my Robert-sama, right? I'm going too!"  
See, she didn't get it.  
I could almost hear a 'rise' as she pleaded to be let in. (TN: 'rise' is 'kiritsu', the thing Japanese class reps say at the beginning of class)

Of course it didn't get through!!

Where is her confidence coming from, I wonder?

I'm saying that you're a bother, why do you so matter-of-factly think you should participate??

Even if I am not going to censure Robert, why would I be inviting someone I'm not familiar with to an office full of government documents?

There are so many things I want to tell her, but I suppress my feelings and tell her the least she needs to know.

"It's about this country's future. You're an outsider. It's troublesome if you're there, so please don't follow us."

When I told her so bluntly, Bitch ended up crying.  
I can't understand why you're crying!  
Is this that? Women's secret weapon, crying?

Sure enough, Henry hurried over to her side and hugged her, while glaring daggers at me. He seemed to mutter something under his breath.  
However!

No matter how much you glare at me, it won't work! I won't listen to your story!!  
I flamboyantly ignored Henry.

"Robert, shall we? Douglas, Hughie, you too."

When I signed 'no buts' with my smile, the three followed reluctantly. I stole a glance at the furious demon king.....  
Louis was tacitly supporting Jessica who wasn't able to walk by herself.....  
Really, spotless.

Oh, I almost forgot.

"I apologise for making such a commotion."

I smiled gently at the remaining students in the dining hall and apologised.  
Thus, the seven of us headed for my office.

.

.

“Daniel, prepare some tea. We’re going to have a discussion. ....Also, quickly go on ahead with the previous case.”

“Understood, sir. ....Everything’s ready, sir.”

When I spoke out to the empty space, he replied calmly behind me. The answer gladdens me, for it advances my plans.....

Also, you’re still good at hiding your presence as always, Daniel.

Before I realised it, there were seven seats prepared in the office.

On a large round table, I seated us in this order from my right: Anglica, Douglas, Robert, Hughie, Louis and Jessica.

I think this is the safest arrangement. Especially Robert and Louis, I have to keep them apart.

I urged them to take a seat and served tea.

I slowly sipped the tea brewed by Daniel.....

Phew, I could finally calm down. Good tea always is good for the mind.

.....Alright, I took a breather, shall we begin now!

First.....

“Robert, what were thinking of doing?”

I erased my smile and asked him with a serious face.

Pressured by my expression, he started laying out excuses.

“That! That’s because Angelica was mocking me like———“

“Hmm..... Blaming a girl, are you?”

But Louis impassively cut off his excuses.

Um, brother-in-law, that’s a scary smile. Also, it’s my duty to protect Angelica, please do not intercede.

For now, Louis censured through his glare.

“Robert, do your actions not go against your code of honour as a knight and a gentleman?”

The quick way to make the musclehead understand is to bring up chivalry and courtesy. He understands these concepts quite easily.

He seemed to have understood a bit, since Robert said,

“I’m sorry! I didn’t realise.....!”

and lowered his head.

I don’t know if he did understand. But at least he understood that he did a bad thing..... so what else could I do?

Well, this guy’s also a martian. Although, unlike Bitch, it only required a ‘simple translation’, so could he still be saved?

Also, the incident this time is not entirely Robert’s fault. At that time, there were two people who could put a brake on him.

“You two are the same, Douglas, Hughie? If you were there, you could have stopped him, right? .....Could it be that you lost even the judgement for that?”

‘You good-for-nothings!’ I think in my head.

“.....Sorry...”

“I’m sorry.”

Douglas really seemed embarrassed, but Hughie seemed to be unable to accept it, wearing an expression challenging my words.

“If Louis and I did not take action, do you realise what kind of mistake you would have in front of the royalty of other countries? Even if Angelica is the future Empress, it’s not proper for a man to make a lady raise her voice like that!”

“Ah..... Angelica, I’m sorry.....!”

“.....”

For now, Douglas looked straight at Angelica and bowed in apology..... But Hughie still had an angry look in his eyes, still glaring at Angelica and me.

.....Hughie... he might be beyond help.

I’m a man who will lead the country. I can’t afford to hesitate when I have to make decisions. However, he is still a student, so.....

Until we graduate from school, I’ll put off such thoughts.

However, if by graduation, you still haven’t fixed yourself, I’ll mercilessly fire you!

I close my eyes for a moment, and then open my eyes.

Then, Angelica gently laid her hands on mine.

I felt my body relaxing. I glanced back, and she turned forward wearing a resolute expression.

I found that I required her support more than ever now. If it weren't for her, I might have lost my cool.

I momentarily grip tightly onto her hand, and calm myself.

"Robert, House Rowling wants to annul the betrothal. The reason being..... I think you should know. The school also gave permission, so when the escort comes, please return home for now."

At my words, Robert dropped his head and nodded lightly. Then, I faced Douglas and Hughie.

"Douglas, reflect on your actions and fix yourself."

"Yes....."

"Hughie, by tomorrow, go discuss your future properly with your fiancée. Also, contemplate on your future and then think about the what you're doing now..... This is an order."

".....All right."

Douglas lowered his head further and Hughie glared stronger at me.

"This is all I want to say. Now, be on your way."

The difficult Hughie is the first to exit the room. Then leaves Robert, his head still lowered. Douglas is not moving in his chair.

The other members are not moving as well, and Angelica didn't let go of my hand as well.

I'll have to work harder.

---

---

Sorry for the delay. I have a sports competition coming up during this weekend, so I had practice and stuff. I don't think I could translate during the weekend because of that. See you next week.

## Chapter 13: Let's investigate this once more.

### Chapter 13: Let's investigate this once more.

Author: It's quite depressing this time. I can't write well..... (TN: Raw says the brush does not glue , so I think it's an idiom with its meaning opposed to 筆が立つ, write well)

---

I told everyone to disperse, yet Douglas still remained in the room. I felt this when he was with Bitch as well. I think that his expression is different from the Douglas I knew.

If he's still here, I wonder if he wants to say something to us. For some reason, he keeps opening and closing his mouth.

He wants to say something, but he can't find the opportunity.

"Douglas, is it fine for you to not accompany them? .....Otherwise, do you have something left to say?"

To make the starting the conversation easier, I give him some water. When I inquired about him, Douglas made a surprised face and then looked at us. Judging from his expression, he probably didn't think that he could receive counselling.

Hearing my suggestion, his face brightened for a moment, but soon his faced changed into a pathetic face on the verge of tears.

For a while, the room fell silent. Since the coffee went cold as well, Daniel started to brew new coffee. I then heard a sound as though Douglas could no longer stifle his weeping.

No one pressed him to calm down, and kept a calm silence.

We continued to sip our drinks until Douglas calmed down. During that time, I drank two cups of coffee so stomach hurt a little. To which I discovered that Daniel was looking at me like a pitiful child. Wait! I asked this over and over again, but why are you looking at me like that!! It can't be helped!? I had to find a way to spend the time! I'm not a very serious person, so I can't endure this atmosphere! But I'm still trying my best to ignore this, you know!?

As I desperately complained towards Daniel in my head, Daniel shot a mischievous smile at me that showed that he was enjoying my reactions.

Damn! Daniel!!

Are you reading my mind or something!?

While I was fooling around with Daniel, Douglas had regained his cool. As his hands were hiding his eyes and his fringe was let down, he spoke in a tiny voice.

“I do not know what happened to me..... Please... help.....”

During the ten years I spent with him, this was the first SOS he sent to me.

.

The Douglas I knew was a cunning man, where one had to tread carefully around him.

However, all of that changed last year.

The fiancée with whom they were in mutual love, died due to disease. Since then, he became heartbroken and never smiled. Shutting himself in, he never connected with anyone.

He lost his vigour and never really talked to his family. He ate so little that he started to thin.

But, only Douglas himself could overcome his mental scar.

We could only wait for the flow of time to heal the wound or for him to have a miraculous meeting.

So we watched by on the sidelines.

.....Well, except for one person..... Robert.

He can't read the mood, and on top of that he doesn't know how to be considerate. To the depressed Douglas, “There's so many women in this world! Cheer up!!” He said something without an ounce of delicacy so shamelessly.

Still, Robert did heal Douglas's wounds, to some degree.

After a year, Douglas recovered just enough to put on a facade, but then he met Bitch.

Because of that, this is why he's like this now..... The reason why Bitch and Douglas got so close together.

.....I can somewhat surmise why.



If I recall correctly, in the reverse harem route, there is a specific way to conquer Douglas.

First, conquer Robert. Then, there are more choices in the route with Douglas. Hmm, uhh, it probably was..... 'Are you hurt?..... You look like a wounded animal trying to desperately hide its injury,' or something?

Robert then took an interest in what Bitch said, to which he spouted silly nonsense like 'Michelle! You might be able to save Douglas' and actively created opportunities for the two to meet. Thanks to that, Douglas route's difficulty drops quite a bit.

.....Robert..... I won't say anything more.....

There were also things like 'I have to be happy for her sake as well,' or 'forgetting is not a sin.'

Also, the final push that conquered Douglas was 'You don't have to hide that wound from me! If you're in pain, I'll take care of you! Please let me!' wasn't it?

Really, Bitch is quite apt at finding a man's weakness, as well as taking advantage of it..... Just that, I wish people didn't fall so easily for that.

"When Clarice died, I thought my heart died along with her. Yet only one year passed, but I no longer felt as sad! This was a betrayal to her, right..... So..... So I, I felt the days grow fainter in my heart!"

Douglas started to speak while silently crying. This time, without wailing, tears silently flowed like waterfalls down his cheeks.

"Then I met Michelle. Her words were as if they were forcing open my wounds, as if blood started to flow again where it had stopped. Somehow....., the pain that had grown faint had returned to normal, that I thought that I was no longer betraying Clarice....."

Douglas softly laid out the emotions he felt after meeting Bitch. Just what is the emotion he holds in those eyes.....

It was more painful for the listener. ....What is that M play, it's like 'Second Roo'. (TN: No idea what this is)

Was that so..... Relying on the wound of the heart..... There's no way that anyone could make a proper decision in that state. But you know? It's troublesome if a future pillar of the country does that.....

I understand the story behind Douglas's state of mind.  
Then....., how should I proceed.....

Should I split him from the main culprit?  
Would he require counselling and rehabilitation?  
Fortunately, I have the right person for that.  
Then I should get on with it!

"Douglas, you should keep away from Michelle for some time. Meanwhile, keep close to us, and stay in the office outside of classes.

I decided to quarantine Douglas.

.  
. .  
.

Still.....

Douglas's case was rather shocking. I didn't think he would have received that much damage from her words.....

After we finished discussing in the office, we escorted Angelica and Jessica back to their room. We also brought Douglas back to his room, and told his butler about the current situation.

I requested Daniel to counsel Douglas too. Everything's in place!

Then, I invited Louis over for tea.....  
But I don't know what we should talk about.

"Hey, Kyle. I strongly believe that if we do not take action regarding Michelle there will be consequences for our country. Outside of those six, there are also many other nobles wagging their tails at her....."

I also heard those rumours.  
Bachelors being captivated by her charms, regardless of position or status. At this rate, there will a catastrophe in the future.  
It seems I have to investigate Bitch further, doesn't it?

"Daniel."  
"Understood, sir."

My consummate butler only heard his name but understood.  
He's a psychic, really!

“Louis, won't you and Jessica investigate the rumours regarding that woman?”  
“Of course, I would gladly cooperate, your highness Kyle.....”

He liked the part 'you and Jessica'. Louis smiled broadly and happily accepted his new mission.

---

Author: It's not much.

---

---

Ah, Douglas, I can really sympathise with you... Painful memories of love tug at your heart and haunt you. Yet when you forget it, the overwhelming guilt weighs you down.

Sorry I'm late everyone. The Kendo competition ended pretty well, placing in 3rd place. However, I seem to have overexerted myself a little too much, as I went down with a cold for the last two days. I'm fine now, so I thought I might like to translate this

|

# Chapter 14: The tremendous change and influence the case brought about

## Chapter 14: The tremendous change and influence the case brought about.

Author: Time for explanations.

---

From the 'annulment of betrothal' case, already a week had passed. The situation was going in a very interesting direction now.

First, Robert had not yet returned. Currently, House Redford seems to be in uproar.

Since Robert is the eldest son, if it went smoothly he would definitely have inherited the position of leading the Royal Guard.....

That musclehead won't be able to.

Managing a marquessate is one thing, but it's problematic for the whole country if someone like him takes an important position like the Royal Guard leader. If the protector of the royal family is such a musclehead, then the court will become full of assassins and spies.

It might be fine if he has a competent aid by his side as a lieutenant that can take care of his work, but if a spy like Bitch appears it's going to be very scary. Well, he seems like the type of person to say 'I can't refuse the wishes of my love,' and spill state secrets, doesn't he?

So I quickly suggested an examination of the human resources management to father through Daniel.

Before, since it was not a matter that should be hastily decided upon, the talks were proceeding slowly, but because of this incident the talks fell through quickly.

Both the marquessate and the position of royal guard captain will be inherited by Robert's little brother.

Education of any kind is best started early.

Fortunately, the little brother has the brains and the proper knowledge as a noble, and he can also read the mood! Does he really share the same genes as Robert?

However.....

The face that Marquess Redford made upon hearing this incident was amazing. As the person in charge this time, I went to the palace with Jessica, and the Marquess made an expression stricken with horror as I calmly reported the situation.

He probably didn't expect Robert to be that much of an idiot. "What did my son learn in school? .....Does he even attend classes?" Or so he asked to me.

Marquess Redford originally planned to have Jessica be betrothed again to his younger son. However, the actions Robert took not only insulted Jessica but also Marquess Rowling.

Since betrothal with House Rowling was no longer a possibility, Marquess Redford had to formally apologise as well as pay a hefty sum of annulment fees.

I had continued to report Robert's actions through Daniel, and Marquess Redford was receiving those through father as well. It appears that there were complaints from House Rowling as well.

Yet the Marquess Redford said, "Robert places importance on chivalry, so he will not deviate from that path," without fully understanding the situation, neglecting the problem.

I think I sort of get why Robert is such a musclehead..... Is it alright? This country's defences?

Thankfully, my worries were for naught. Since there is a woman with good acumen in House Redford.

Marchioness Redford seemed to not have received reports on Robert until this incident. So upon hearing news about my reports, she went pale in shock. Marquess Redford had thought that things would get out of hand if he delivered the reports to his wife, so he had not told her.

"There's an important talk we should have later....."

She said so to Marquess Redford with a bone-chilling smile exceeding that of Louis's.

After shooting that smile to her husband, she stands in front of Marquess and Marchioness Rowling.

"Our son has been very rude to you. Our House is solely to blame for it. May I

suggest that we withdraw our proposal of betrothal?”

She acknowledges that her House was to blame and chose to “withdraw” instead of outright “break” to not disgrace House Rowling.

It’s not a perfectly clean ending, but their relations in high society have not worsened, at least superficially. There was no danger of gossip, and it became easy to avoid political attacks.

Also, by disinheriting Robert, they were showing plenty of respect to House Rowling.

It seems that there will not be any more commotions from House Rowling. Also, currently, the heir of a duchy Louis is already making his moves to be betrothed to Jessica so House Rowling did not wish to create more incidents.

Smiling bitterly, the Marquess and Marchioness Rowling accepted Marchioness Redford’s apology, ending the feud between the two houses, for now.

After the two Houses reconciled.

Marchioness Redford hugged Jessica tightly, saying, “our senseless son has caused you much grief..... I’m really sorry.....” while crying many times.

It appeared that the marchioness regarded Jessica like a daughter. Before being a musclehead, Robert was her son, and Jessica was engaged to him.

As she hugged Jessica tightly, her muttering curses to her son could be heard.

After she was done with hugging Jessica,

“I am very sorry to have betrayed your expectations, your highness..... Please lend your hand to Jessica to ensure her happiness. I implore you.”

She politely bowed her head.

At that moment, I thought that House Redford was able to come this far thanks to her acumen.

Anyway, such a thing happened.....

Until Robert decides on what he will do in the future, it was concluded that he will not return to school for the time being.

I believe that the Marchioness is planning something.

Robert..... he is annoying when he is around, but it is a little sad when he is not around.....

.

Hughie too broke his betrothal. After talking with his fiancée April August, it seems that she gave up. (TN: April August? Really?)

April, a year older than me, had the personality of a caring mother..... more like a responsible older sister. Everyone thought she was fit for a pampered child like Hughie, but the prideful Hughie disliked her.

Then, he met with Bitch who knew and said what men wanted to hear.

A nagging motherly... sisterly figure, and Bitch who fanned his ego. For the spoilt child Hughie it was clear that Bitch was better. Also, it was more satisfying for his pride to meet a woman of the age than an older woman.

After talking with Hughie, April concluded that Hughie was a lost cause and promptly annulled their engagement.

Since both houses were already aware of the problem, it seemed that the annulment would proceed smoothly.

.

Nowadays, the six of us, Louis, Douglas, Angelica, Jessica, April and I spent time together.

Douglas needed to open his eyes.

From his interaction with Bitch, his wound from Clarice's death deepened. There were times he had impulses to hurt himself as well.

So I asked April to be with Douglas. I scouted her to counsel Douglas.

She is a noisy nagging person, but she did know how to deal with people with troubles.

She does give advice, but fundamentally waits for the other person to draw their own conclusion.

She just watches over the other person. She patiently waits for an answer. She takes the long road.

It's excruciatingly passive and requires a lot of patience, but I believe that Douglas is better suited to this kind of contact.

She is fit for counselling Douglas.

I have confidence that Douglas will soon return to normal.

.

As for myself.....

I'm a little depressed because I couldn't find the time to have a date with Angelica.....

But since Henry was being openly hostile towards me after that incident, the current situation might be for the better. Since Henry is a yandere (and a mad one at that) it would be troublesome if Angelica got caught up his attacks.

In the game, people said, 'the only happy ending with Henry is the reverse harem route!' or something.

In the 'normal ending', 'Bitch's ability to captivate men is acknowledged, so Henry kidnaps her away to his country and uses her as a spy against men'. In the 'bad ending', 'she gets stuffed, preserved and mounted in Henry's room as a decoration'. In the 'happy ending', 'she gets kidnapped and imprisoned in Henry's country, and spends the rest of her life together with Henry'. Those kind of crazy settings defined Henry as a character.

Because I made Bitch cry that time, he now sees me as an enemy. So I'm currently taking all possible actions! I'm really busy.

Ahh, I want to rest.....

.

.

Today, I continued to do my work while complaining.

By evening I was like an overworked salaryman.

Still, I pretended to be fine and had dinner with Louis and Douglas.

"Kyle, do you have some time?"

I thought the day was finally over, but Louis came over with a devilish smile. Is it about Bitch?

It seems I'll have to endure a little more!

"Would you care for some tea in my room afterwards?"

So the two of them followed me to my room afterwards.

Outside the dining hall, there was one person with the eyes of a predator staring at us.



Of course, it was Prince Henry.....

No matter how you see it, he is clearly scheming something..... what should I do. If nothing bad happens to Angelica and others, then that's fine.....

“That prince, he must be planning something, right? Well, as long as he does not do anything to our precious, I do not really care though.”

Louis said the same thing I was thinking and smiled at me. Thus, I replied,

“Treasure is meant to be protected, so I think it is rather fun thinking up ways to protect them, eh?”

I suggested to plan together.

“Right, it might be interesting to create some very strong security measures.”

He gladly accepted my proposal without hesitation, still making that sinister smile.

---

Author: Next chapter is idle talk.

---

TN: Sorry, I was really sick, so I couldn't do anything last week.

Gosh Henry is scary, yandere just scares me so much. Next chapter is really funny, it's going to be about Daniel.

# Idle Talk: A butler's domain (Daniel)

## Idle Talk: A butler's domain (Daniel)

Author: the cheat-like settings for the Daniel everyone(?) likes.

---

I am Daniel, Kyle-sama's exclusive butler.

It has only been three years since I became His Highness Kyle's exclusive butler, but as I have served the royal family before that I knew His Highness from a long time ago.

Before I may discuss His Highness, I believe that I should first explain what a butler is.

In this world, only members of a certain race can become butlers. Daemons.

Humanoid races with magic are all called daemons, and of those only those capable of 'using magic with a sound mind' may become butlers.

To see if we have the capability to become butlers, we receive professional education from a young age. Those without potential are quickly excluded, and even then only a selected few may become butlers.

At school we are taught the concept of 'domains'. It is an important concept on the flow and fate of the world and our desires.

If we make our own moves, we may end up changing the world too easily.

Thus we receive various education on etiquette and within those classes destiny. Then only those who fully understand 'domain' are selected and receive our qualifications in the 'room of baptism'.

There are many who are not qualified, so there are less than a dozen butlers graduating every year.

Of course, we cannot graduate until we are qualified, but age does not matter, I believe.

Daemons, in comparison to humans, enjoy longevity so there is no restriction on learning. It is more honourable to be qualified as a butler than it is to graduate early.

After we are baptised, we are enrolled in the association and are graded according to our power.

These grades may change, but I have yet to see a butler's grade change. I wonder if I can witness that once in this long life...?

Anyhow, after we become butlers, We are allowed to pick our future workplace among the commissions. Here, higher ranking butlers may choose earlier. There are some commissions that do not get any butlers appointed for many years.

Therefore, regardless of status, there are houses that have many butlers as well as houses that can only spare a few butlers.

Those houses do not require as many butlers. In other words, they are houses about to fall to ruin, and have less importance.

The butlers have the final say. It is also rather common to see butlers break their contract after their original masters have passed away.

Our life expectancy is long, so there is no real value in serving a house even after the original master has passed away.

When we hold the commission documents in our hands, we can see the future of the commissioner and ourselves. The future is not set in stone, but there is high chance of it happening, so it helps greatly in selecting our master.

Also, the stronger our powers are, the accuracy of our clairvoyance increases, allowing us to see different possibilities as well.

Of course, there are many uncertain elements so we cannot see more than a hundred years into the future.

That does not change no matter how strong our powers are.

.

I received the best records and was allowed to become a butler. However, I noticed something strange as I was leafing through the documents.

All the futures from this one country was uncertain.

There was something causing that in that country.

What was the uncertain aspect?

I wanted to know what was causing it, so I gathered all the documents from that country.

Among them, my clairvoyance did not work at all on the royal family. It was certain that the royal family had a random factor.

When I discovered that, I became very excited, like a little child.

Thus, I requested to be appointed as the royal family's butler.

.

Now then, about the royal family in question.....

His Highness Kyle has two younger siblings, Prince Abel, who is two years younger, and Princess Lilith, who is three years younger.

Prince Abel is innocent and naïve. I believe that running the country will be too much of a burden for his mental health.

Princess Lilith is bold, and has the greatest potential as a queen, but her tastes in men are bad so it might not be the best choice to let her run the country.

Finally, Kyle-sama was a very earnest worker. Aspiring to become a good king in the future, he studied various subjects, and endured the pressure placed on him. It is rather nice, but frankly I thought he was boring.

He was just a good boy. I could not find anything interesting in him.

So, at first, I considered refusing the offer to become his exclusive butler. However, my intuitions told me to become his exclusive butler so I tried it out for now.

A daemon's life is long, so I thought it might be interesting. Of course, there was also the fact that I could break the contract any time I wanted.

Now, I really think it was a wise choice.

Until recently, Kyle-sama was indeed very boring. It might have been more interesting to serve Louis-sama or Angelica-sama. However, everything changed since Kyle-sama collapsed the day before this year's entrance ceremony.

From then on his personality changed..... or rather, mixed? His earnest and warm-hearted personality remained the same, while his ability to observe and judge became sharper. Also, instead of taking care of everything by himself, he started enlisting other's help, freeing up some time for himself. He also started to utilise me better, shall I say? Well, his character tilted slightly to the darker side, but he became more

charismatic.

Although I said his personality worsened, it is fitting for a man of his age to act that way.

Kyle-sama has now become someone fit to be called ‘his highness’.

As I also receive his thoughts a little, I am having some trouble trying not to laugh nowadays.

Really.....

Now I am certain. The ‘random factor’ of this country is His Highness Kyle.

“Soon, there will be changes in the personnel, so there may be problems regarding the heirs of important Houses, so wish to make preparations for that. Also, about a month later, Robert and Jessica will annul their engagement, so there may be some conflict with Henry from the neighbouring country. As for Henry, I am planning to cause his downfall, so it should be fine, but please contact the related divisions in advance.”

After Kyle-sama became His Highness Kyle, he thus told me.....

It was as if he received divinations from God.

What will happen to His Highness Kyle and how will he respond to them.....

The future events and response of youngsters to them. Thinking of that, I face curls into a grin.

I really think that His Highness Kyle is a very intriguing genius.

So I secretly pledged myself to continue serving him.

I never knew that serving someone could be this fun.

---

Author: more to come later.

---

TN: Can I have a butler please? I think butlers are more capable than the actual elites of the countries.

# Chapter 15: The mystery deepens

## Chapter 15: The mystery deepens

By the time I returned to my room, the drinks were already prepared. I asked Louis to sit down and sat down as well.

When we sat down, Daniel swiftly brewed us new drinks.

Once he's finished with brewing tea, he silently melts back into the background.

As I sipped on my coffee, I absentmindedly thought, 'I'd like to drink green tea after a meal.'

"My apologies, sir."

Daniel reappeared by the side of the table.

He held a new kettle in his hand.

He gently placed new tea cups that had calligraphy of fish on them. On those pre-heated cups, he poured tea.

Daniel, he's really too good.

On top of that, these cups. Where did he even get these?

I have so much I want to ask, but I'm too tired today.

So I'll refrain from being nitpicky today!

I sink into the chair and enjoy the green tea. I hadn't though I would be able to enjoy green tea in this world, so I'm doubly touched.

Back in Japan, I always had Houjicha or loose leaf tea. Though since I didn't have any strong feelings, I didn't take the proper measures and just threw the leaves into a kettle, enjoying the boiled water.

(TN: About the tea, they're both green tea leaves, just one is roasted and one is not. I'm not familiar with tea stuff in English so please forgive me for the bad TL)

"Fuu... green tea after a meal is the best."

My tired body relaxes itself in reaction to the green tea.

Feeling happy, I breathed out a sigh of satisfaction.

Across from me, Louis carefully tasted the new tea. It might have been to his liking, since he was smiling happily.

“It’s the first time I had this, but it’s pretty good. Fits the mood now.”

To see a handsome foreigner drink green tea from a fish calligraphy cup, it was rather surreal.

.....Ah, I’m also a handsome foreigner now!

.

.

Taking a breath thanks to the tea, we exchanged new information about Bitch.

According to Daniel’s reports, Bitch’s mother was influential in forming her personality.

Bitch’s mum is a so-called ‘refined courtesan’, not easily allowing men of all kinds to approach her, quite famous in her field.

When she was still in the field, it seemed that there were many men surrounding her. Saying hot passionate words, giving various gifts..... Many people tried to captivate her.

Among all those people, only those chosen by her had permission to touch her.

Happy to see her face, lucky to speak with her, blessed to spend a night with her.

That was what went around.

One of the few blessed to spend a night with her was Baron Rhône. However, although it is unknown whether it was on purpose or not, Bitch’s mother ended up getting pregnant. She then was forced to become a concubine.

Thinking of the various circumstances, Bitch might not be the Baron’s child. Even so, Baron Rhône seized this opportunity to get Bitch’s mother. To avoid the jealousy of his wife and other men, he kept her secluded in a villa. Yet, she continued to bewitch men there.

She did nothing but just be there. She never exceeded that bound, just smiling to control men. No, the men just moved on their own.

Most didn’t even show up at the villa, but every day there were gifts for Bitch’s mother.

Growing in that environment, Bitch came to think that it was normal. Inheriting her mother’s talents, she too was bewitching men.

However, there is one big difference that sets Bitch and her mother apart. Bitch's mother moved around without causing much trouble, but as Bitch was acting on her intuitions, she could not stop herself from causing trouble. As a result, she caused quite a few accidents and ended up here.

.

.

Louis and I were very disappointed at these reports. It was surprising to hear that there was a courtesan of that calibre, but it was more alarming to hear that bitch who inherited her talents (if only she had the brains to use them properly.....) was roaming around freely. Taking into consideration Bitch's influence in school, the country may just be shaken apart.

Even if we make a move now, more problems will pop out. Could there be more.....?

"Just..... Let's just ask Prince Henry from the neighbouring country to take her away as a souvenir. If he takes her, she can no longer cause trouble here."  
"Indeed..... that would be the best, right?"

We locked our eyes together and croaked out a dry laughter.

.

.

Next up is Louis's report.....

"Now, Jessica's face then was so cute, I just wanted to tease her. Hey, are you listening?"

He boastingly started recounting the time when he was investigating into Bitch's rumours.

"So I want to slowly close the gap between us and make her think that I love her more than Robert..... Then I want to get engaged to her before we graduate."

"Why are you making such a detailed plan? Your rivals are gone, you can get her quickly now."



“I want to prioritise her feelings..... I already talked to House Rowling, and they said they were waiting for such a situation for ten years already, so I wouldn’t mind waiting a few more years.....”

“Louis, you.....”

Louis is really handsome when he says that with his sweet gaze.  
Waiting for his love to come by her own will.....

I was deeply moved by his ‘love’, but then he looked at me and grinned.

“But I want to love her quickly so I have to persuade her as much as I can, eh? Just hunting is not enough. I have to show her the way while I slowly surround her, you see?”

Wait what!

I take that back! Give my feelings back!  
And Jessica, run! Run with all your strength!  
The devil’s watching you with hunter’s eyes!?

But it’s Louis. It should be fine.  
I think it should lead to the happiest outcome for Jessica as well.

The heartbroken Jessica will be healed, and my friend will achieve his long desired love, so I do think it’s a good thing, you know?  
However, I don’t even have time for a date with Angelica..... So dizzyingly tiring everyday.....  
It can’t be helped, could it? Well, it is my job, I know.

Here I should celebrate my friend’s happiness.....

Louis, congratulations! And..... go explode!!

.

.

For a while, I continued to listen to Louis’s report which was at the same time his love story, but there was something that intrigued me.

“Sometimes, Bitch’s eyes go blank and she moves somewhere else. Then, there was Henry, Jackie, Hughie and Brad there. It was scary, seeing her move as if she knew that they were going to be there. She said some strange stuff like ‘just

according to the divination!'. But sometimes she goes to places where nobody is, where she tilts her head in amusement, saying 'the divinations miss often these days,' or something."

..... Um....., What am I to think about this?

I had suspicions in a corner of my mind that she she might be a reincarnated person.

However, her actions are supposedly according to 'divinations'.

I thought it might be because of the game, but then it would not lead her to places where there's no-one.

What's going on?

I feel uneasy at not being to predict her now. I can no longer plan countermeasures.

When I was frowning from uneasiness, someone placed a gentle hand on my shoulder. I knew who it was without even turning around.

It was Daniel.

When I looked at him, he just silently smiled at me.

I calmed down seeing that.

Whatever happens, the psychic Daniel is here. It's a baseless guess, but just the thought makes me relieved.

When I did not have enough information on Bitch, I only acted on the information i already had. There might have been some unwise choices, but it all worked out somehow.

Now, I no longer have to do it alone. Everyone's helping out.

I relaxed a bit, thinking it would work out one way or another.

## Chapter 16: The mystery seems to ever increase.

### Chapter 16: The mystery seems to ever increase.

First, we decided to continue observing Bitch.

We also decided to increase our target of observation, that is.....

One of the love interests, the bespectacled bastard boyfriend Brad. (TN: *kichiku megane* in raw, for those who know)

This guy, he's acting strangely.

Talking about Bitch and Robert in front of Jessica as if to make her jealous, or leading Bitch and Hughie in front of April.

And when Angelica goes to chastise Bitch, he stares at Angelica with a strange look.

Today, he approached Jessica, who was with Louis, and asked, 'I wonder what Robert is doing now?' The students already know the two broke their engagement. Normally one wouldn't think of asking such a thing.

Moreover, Brad is the etiquette teacher. I can't understand why he would act in such a way.

On top of that, he seemed to have made a creepy grin as he looked at the angry Louis.

Also, he seems to be making Henry be more possessive of Bitch.

Whenever Henry and Bitch are having a pleasant conversation, he squeezes in between them, unnecessarily touching her or talking with another love interest. When Bitch becomes flustered because of this, he then smiles wryly.

.....I have no idea what he wants.

In the game, Brad's setting was that he is 'a friendly etiquette teacher on the surface, but a bespectacled bastard deep down'.

Silver-haired and wearing slim-frame glasses, teaching classes with a warm smile, I recall my little sister agonising over the still.

As the story progresses, he reveals his true nature and proceeds on to sweet 'discipline', which is really just sexual harassment.....

I remember my little sister huffing and moaning over this still, making me rather

queasy, something I wish I didn't have to remember.

Brad in this world must be a bespectacled bastard in this world as well. But in the game he didn't do anything like this.

.....Just what is going on?

The more I investigate, the deeper the mystery gets. I am so very confused. How should I deal with this mystery.....

Should I just stop investigating?

Or so I thought for a moment.

However, Brad is getting dangerously closely to girls such as Angelica, Jessica and April, so if he is scheming something, I'll have to do something!

Henry's actions are disturbing too, I need to put more focus into making countermeasures.

".....We have to tell the ladies to never act on their own..... Actually, it might be dangerous even if they are together....."

"Indeed. Even if we dispatch our butlers, we still can't predict their next moves."

"Yeah. For example, if that is the predestined fate, the butler do not seek to change it, so we can't expect to use them to avoid disaster."

Since we are unable to predict the actions of Henry and Brad, 'the two big perverts' of the game, we first must secure the safety of the girls.

Because of the ability 'butlers' have, they also act as bodyguards in school, but they have something called 'domain' and they do not overstep that bound.

Thus when there is a crisis and the butlers determine it do be an unshakable fate, they do not intervene in these. So we can't rely completely on butlers for the girls' safety.

Butlers with more power seem to be able to see more futures, so their 'domain' is also wider. So their actions as butlers are completely different.

They actively intervene in events.

So more powerful butlers are always in demand.

However, as the butlers have the final say in choosing the contract, having power and money does not guarantee a superb butler.

It's quite fortunate to have the best butler available for me.

If the butlers have the ability on par with Daniel, I can rest easy and assign

them the task of guarding, but unfortunately it's not possible.

Also, butlers do not see the future of anyone else other than their masters. So I can't leave Daniel to guard Angelica and others.

If I do that it's also same as insulting Angelica's butler. Intervening in another butler's bounds is akin to saying 'you are an incompetent butler'.

So I can't use Daniel here.

Then..... it's up to us to protect them, eh?

“.....Starting tomorrow, the six of us should act as a group.”

“For now, that might be the best action.....”

We faced each other, both looking very disappointed, and decided on our plan for tomorrow. Then we sipped some green tea from Daniel and sighed heavily.

We had to end today's meeting without being able to create a proper plan.....

.

.

.

The next day, except in class the six of stuck together while continuing the investigation.....

Brad....., disgusting.

He is cleverly leading Bitch's actions to make us angry.

Then he watches from afar, enjoying our reactions.....

Yes! He's enjoying it!!

Normally he puts on a meek smile. However, behind those glasses, we can see the sinister look of rapture!

That is the face of a sadist. No, more like a degenerate?

He gets excited from seeing our disturbed expressions. The way he looks at us in ecstasy is *really* terrifying.

Also, even though it was him who drew Bitch and other men closer, he looks at them very jealously..... Is he also a hardcore masochist.....?

Then when he realises that we are there, he shoots us a strange gaze as well!

That is definitely the eyes of a predator that found new prey.

Really scary.

Those eyes were terrifying enough to almost make us chicken out.

It could be that the two of us are in most danger.....

.

.

.

After we observed for some days, we saw that Bitch acted strangely sometimes.

It happens for a few minutes, or even few dozen minutes, and it feels like her personality has changed.

Brad even aims for those moments, teasing her with different methods, where Bitch is caught up in them.

When I read Louis's report of a 'helter-skelter Bitch', I couldn't believe my eyes, but when her personality is changed she is indeed always flustered.

She feigns composure, but it shows through.

Maybe Hughie's the only one who doesn't realise it? No, it might unexpectedly be Henry who doesn't realise it.

With each passing day, Bitch's change became more noticeable. By the fifth day, her personality completely changed.

She was acting cautiously, her change being so great, but it was almost as if an alien became human.

Superficially, she lets herself get led by Brad and gets together with others, but I could tell that she was treading carefully to not offend Henry and Brad.

Her smiles sometimes just freeze up, and when Henry and Brad act obsessively her eyes well up with tears.

More mysteries now..... My head is already overloaded.  
Just what's going to happen from here on?

---

---

TN: Kichiku megane... that was some shocking stuff for me (my first BL experience). But it is quite interesting.

## Chapter 17: That place was the spot of terror.

### Chapter 17: That place was the spot of terror.

“Kyle-kou, may I have some of your time?”

(TN: -kou is used for addressing princes.)

Henry approached the six of us in the dining hall two days after we felt that Bitch’s personality completely changed.

He approached us with a sly grin on his face.

That face showed, ‘I’m scheming something, so what?’ like a small fry. For a prince to feel like a small fry, I’m worried about the neighbouring kingdom.

I want to shrug here, as if I’m saying ‘mum told me not to follow strangers who give candies’, in a wild manner!

It’s scary seeing that bespectacled bastard smirking like that!

Is he pulling the strings here!?

It’s also frightening to see Henry’s butler pour tea for Brad as well!

“Because of recent events, we are acting together. If it does not trouble you for all six of us to be present, shall we change the place?”

Louis, who realised I was slightly trembling in fear (and was also feeling the same fear), responded in my stead.

I shot a sour expression to Henry on purpose for a moment, and quickly returned to an impassive expression.

I know it’s not a face that should be made to a prince, but I should let it show that I know they’re planning something.

They were making faces at me, too, anyway.

“I don’t mind. I only wish for some time to talk with Prince Kyle.”

Henry pretended to not have understood the subtle refusal and keep at it. As we were acting composed, his expression changed as if he thought up something and started yelling something at Bitch.

“..... Hey, Michelle! Didn’t you want to talk to the Imperial Prince? Weren’t you always excited about him, going ‘lovely, lovely’? .....Come to think of it.....

You didn't say that much recently, huh?"

"...R,...Right! L, lovely! To be able to talk with Kyle-sama.....!"

"See, Michelle also wants to talk with you. I want to talk about the recent commotions."

Henry, still keeping a sly expression, suddenly smiled at Bitch. Suddenly talked to, Bitch made a dumbfounded expression, but forced herself to look excited. Henry takes advantage of her reaction and clings on tenaciously. Needless to say, we don't want to be involved with perverts like Henry and Brad. While I was thinking how to refuse, I turned my sight towards Bitch.....

Bitch, you..... your face is twitching madly, you know?  
I can't say that is a new character either.....

And in the eyes of Henry who was watching Bitch there was a dangerous glint, and as for Brad.....  
I, didn't, see, anything!!

What the heck! That's scarier than a horror house!?  
A different kind of scary, but still!!

Furtively turning my gaze to our people, I saw that Louis, Angelica and April's faces were also twitching.  
Douglas and Jessica watched on, interested.

.....Dense people and natural airheads are the best.....  
At times like this, I want to become dense, really.

Anyway, how should I refuse this?

"Kyle-sama, there were some documents that need to be finished by today. I believe it might be better to prioritise those first today?"

While I was pondering, Angelica floated a rescue boat!  
Thank you! I'm getting on board at full power!!

"Is that so..... I apologise, if it does not trouble you, may we talk later?"  
"It can't be helped then."

I stood up and flashed the usual smile at Henry. Henry too stared at me with a smile of his, but he stopped stubborn.



“If you wish to discuss about Robert, I have nothing I can say. That is matter for House Redford and the Empire so it is not something to easily say to others..... especially to foreigners.”

They also might use Robert as an excuse, so I tell them that I can't say anything in advance.

Since I said everything I wanted to say, I decided to leave this place quickly.

“Then, shall we return to the office.”

Without looking back, we strode out of that spot of terror.....

I didn't run away! This is a tactical withdrawal!!

I repeat! This is a tactical withdrawal!!

.

Taking shelter in the office, we spent rest of the afternoon exhausted. The mental fatigue was just so great.

We couldn't even sip on Daniel's tea.

.....No, wait. Douglas and Jessica were still enjoying their tea..... Dense people and natural airheads are strong?

Our mental structure is different.

However..... they weren't always this way. What happened?

It could be that they became this way to avoid mental afflictions. A self-protection method of the human brain, perhaps.

.

After we spent a few hours at the office, we saw the ladies off while pleading them to not act on their own.

Louis, Douglas and I had dinner together, and then Louis and I had tea in my room.

The superb butler Daniel prepared excellent green tea again.

“Thank you, Daniel.”

“I am just doing my duty, sir.”

I thanked him sincerely.

I especially like today's tea.

Because.....

It was really terrifying today.

The fear I feel from a degenerate is not something to be underestimated.

When I sighed heavily, I saw Louis sigh heavily too.

“What should we do about that? Frankly, I do not wish to be involved.”

“.....I most vehemently agree. I also do not wish to be involved. However.....”

“Right, but still..... just what.....”

Whew.....

We sighed heavily at the same time.

As there is the possibility that someone close to us might be hurt, we can't ignore it.

Even if the adversary is terrifying, we have to face it.

Why are all my adversaries martians?

Plus, this time it's a cunning one that is harmful to humanity.

However, we lack too much information regarding this.

Information is the best defence and offence in fights.

But I don't want to make Louis investigate more, nor do I want to do it myself.

They're dangerous, I can't risk it.

“Daniel..... can I ask you to do it?”

When croaked so, half tears, Daniel appeared next to me and made a 'my my' face. Still.

(TN: my my = *yare yare*)

“Understood, sir.”

The superb butler still accepted such a pathetic request from his master. I really like my butler Daniel!

Louis, who was holding his breath, smiled upon hearing Daniel's reply and then we relaxed, letting the strength leave our shoulders.

Then, someone knocked on the door.

Who is it at this time?

It is abnormal for one to visit someone else after dinner without notifying in

advance.

Also, there are specific magical instruments used by servants for notifying future visits, so there usually are no knocks.

If there is knocking on the door, it meant that a student or a teacher came directly to the room.

To such a suspicious person Daniel silently and swiftly responded.

A while later, the person behind Daniel was———

“I apologise for intruding at this time.”

Bitch, deep in thought.

|

## Chapter 18: Bitch's secret.

### Chapter 18: Bitch's secret.

My eyes went wide open when I saw Daniel.  
He knows I loathe Bitch... Why then?  
I would have liked my butler to gently lead her away. The time is late, it is not any time to call ladies who are not fiancées.

Realising my gaze, Daniel sent a modest smile my way.  
That silent smile was urging me to listen to Bitch's story.  
I see..... So we need her now?

Daniel can see things that we cannot. By Bitch coming to the room, he can see something related to me in the close future, and that something is very important to us.  
It can't be helped then.

"To come to a male student's room at this time, was there something urgent? .....Well, shall we have some tea and converse? .....Daniel, please prepare a seat for the lady."

Before I can finish my sentence, Daniel already prepared Bitch's seat and tea at my table. He also brewed new tea, which was black tea instead of green tea. Then I should just make a killer smile as a service. Well, I'll let her say complaints, at least? That's a given.  
What will you do if Angelica misunderstands because you came at this time!? Louis, too, was showing a faked welcoming smile.

"Th, thank you..... very..... much."

Bitch made an awkward expression to our forced smiles and took her seat. In the furtive glances she stole, I saw that her eyes were watery and quivering, as if she was terrified.  
Without a doubt, she realised that our smiles are fake, that she is not welcome here.  
After her personality changed, she can now read the mood.

“.....”  
“.....”  
“.....”

A, awkward.

Bitch, wanting to say something, looks furtively this way, but nothing comes out of her mouth.

Since she was not saying anything and also because we can't talk first, the room became silent to the point where I can almost hear my own heartbeat. Only the sound of us sipping tea reverberated through the room.

Bitch! You, you have story to tell, don't you? Then will you not do something about this atmosphere!?

I momentarily glared at Bitch.

Then, as if she made up her mind, Bitch raised her head and looked at us.

“.....Um..... Could you two be reincarnators!?”

To me who was becoming restless because of the mood, a bomb dropped.

Reincarnation, this development came as I thought!

Suppressing my stiff reaction with willpower, I made a peering expression.

“Reincarnation?”

I shortly ask, feigning that I don't know what she is talking about.

I can't let someone the likes of Bitch know my secret. I won't tell it even to Louis nor to Angelica, I'll take my secret to the grave.

.....The cat's out of the bag for Daniel, but, that's just Daniel..... yeah.

When I saw Louis, he too was being suspicious of Bitch, and did not turn his sight away to me.

“Huh.....? Is it different?”

To our reactions, Bitch panicked.

“He's not a reincarnator, but what's up with that flag evasion rate? .....Is this world....., could it be different?.....But, it's so similar...? And the current situation is what Yacchan talked about.”

She started murmuring to herself. It seems she's convinced that this is the

world of 'I'll Risk Everything for You'.

Louis was still looking suspiciously at Bitch, but I froze up at her words. The words 'current situation'.

That game..... does it have other hidden routes?

"Oh, what I said just now, please forget it! I'm sorry! I said something strange and took your precious time!"

"No, it's alright. More importantly, you said something about the current situation, but if there is something you know, may you tell us what it is? We may be able to assist depending on the circumstances."

Since Bitch's prediction was wrong, she started trying to leave. But I promised assistance to goad information out of her.

Well, I'm not going to talk about my reincarnation here, but how about Bitch?

"Well, it is not anything important. I just..... I, I wanted to talk with the two of you!"

Seeing Bitch who forced a smile, I was convinced that her new personality had some common sense and perceptiveness. It is slightly worrying that she is a bit heedless, but it's forgivable compared to her previous personality.

Then I should also change my attitude.

"If Daniel let you in here, it means that he concluded that it is important even if your story may be fake. So....., anything is fine, will you please tell us? Please....."

I put on a serious face and bowed.

Seeing me bow, both Louis and Bitch looked surprised.

But this is an important turning point. I can't let this opportunity pass.

For this information, I can bow however much she wants.

My sincerity passed through, so Bitch..... no, Michelle dropped her head in silence for a moment deep in thought, but soon lifted her head in determination.

"Alright..... From here on, I will tell a story the likes of a fantasy novel. It will be hard to believe, but for me it is my current situation. And this current situation is very important to our future. I do not know how much of this story you sirs can believe. This world is full of new and strange customs..... I am not very confident

in my ability to explain properly. Is it still alright?”

She warns that we would not be able to understand in advance, looking for confirmation. Michelle’s eyes looked very determined, as if she were clinging to a last hope.

I could see that she was cornered quite badly.

Is it because of Henry and Brad’s obsession I wonder. If she is a reincarnator, then she probably does understand the strangeness of the current situation.

“Ahh, I shall try.”

“I, too..... I don’t follow, but..... I shall try my best to understand.”

Thus, I make eye contact with Michelle and solemnly nod. Louis looked confused, but he gave his consent.

Relieved at our reaction, Michelle looked less strained. She let out a sigh of relief and started talking.

However.....

Her story was beyond expectation.

---

---

TN: I’ll just leave this cliff here.

## Chapter 19: Bitch's story is amazing!

### Chapter 19: Bitch's story is amazing!

Michelle's story was rather shocking.

"So, it's a structure where you can realise a maiden's delusions!"

It must have been tough to explain the system and content of otome game. To explain the machine, or the meaning of the game, she was using a lot of metaphors.....

We spent a lot of time on just listening to her explanation on the game and now we finally arrived on the important topic of the current situation.

Although Michelle was explaining things so desperately, but sorry for her Louis did not seem to get most of the story. How about..... Daniel?

It's strange how I think that Daniel can understand just from the reason.

.

From Michelle's story, I learned that her personality is the high school girl that was nearby when I died in the accident. The girl who was dissing Angelica.

As I died on the spot, I instantly reincarnated as Kyle, but Michelle was hanging between life and death for a month.

Then, she saw some dreams where she was playing this game.

Recently, she felt that the dreams were feeling rather realistic, and before she realised it the game became the reality.

So she said she is still in deep confusion.

Also, since we do not know what happened to the other girl, there may be more reincarnators.

Actually, I remember that there were quite a bit of people, since it was the morning rush hour.

I can't fathom how many people died from that accident, and how many reincarnated in this world.

I believe that's also why Michelle thought we were reincarnators.

.



.

Now, about the current situation.....

First, that game had three different versions. Two console versions and a PC version. All three of them are for all ages, but it seems that there were three additional contents for the PC versions.

All additional content was rated R-18.

One added H-CG sets and additional scenarios, the complementary edition. One is for the fujoshi people, where the love interests couple up together as a result of the player character's actions, the BL edition.

One is where the player character is either the bespectacled bastard or Kyle, where the objective is to conquer the heroines or rivals, the Casanova edition.

Some incredible additional content.

As my little sister played on console, I didn't even know such things existed. Michelle too apparently did not play those herself, and just heard from her friend 'Yacchan'. However, since she talked about it a lot, she knew the large flow quite well.

However, she does not know all the details, so she has to make second-hand guesses with the current situation.

As a side note, Yacchan or whoever apparently played all the editions and routes.

And, about the troubling situation now.

Seeing how the events unfolded, it probably is the BL edition or the Casanova edition currently happening.

That thing at the dining hall must have been a scripted event.

If we chose to 'join up and talk', then apparently Brad would have looked at someone among us like a predator.

Scary stuff?

"What do you mean? Someone among us..... does that include men.....?"

"Since Brad was a character where 'the glasses intensified his brutishness' in the game....."

Louis cringed in agony. Michelle's reply was also somewhat weird.

That sounds as if the glasses are the main body, you know?

Though I think that, I don't retort, no, I won't retort.

I'm not easily scared, just, gays scare me. In my previous life, I received a trauma. Anyway.....

No wonder I wanted to hide my behind when I felt Brad's gaze.....

And about Michelle herself.

She feels that she is going toward Henry route. The bespectacled bastard is also targeting her, but it's confusing since his objective is uncertain.

Feeling endangered, she was agonising over her future actions, and when she saw our reactions at the dining hall, she thought of the possibility that we too were reincarnators.

She decided to talk to us believing that we too felt the same danger.

She felt that it would be best to gain our cooperation quickly, so she came for us even though it was late.

.

Nevertheless..... it's a scary story.

Michelle did not think anything much when it was game, but when she reincarnated, she was shocked at what a bitch she was, as well as how she was moving towards a checkmate.

Feeling that it would be reincarnation → end at this rate, she was doing anything she can to make up for it, so she wanted our cooperation.

I can sympathise with her. I'm sure I would have gone mad if I reincarnated as Bitch.

.

As I received too much information for my brain to process, we decided to gather again the day after tomorrow at my room at the same time and concluded for the day.

I also advised Michelle to rest for two days, and also to refuse any visits.

"Louis, today's story, could you understand it?"

"No, I could not grasp most of what she said..... How about you?"

".....I also could not..... Shall we talk again tomorrow night?"

"Indeed. I need some time reorganise my thoughts."

After I sent Daniel to see Michelle off, Louis and I discussed tomorrow's

schedule.

Also,

“More importantly..... there is a bigger problem, Kyle.”

“Ah...”

“How will we we explain this? I can only a future where there are misunderstandings.....”

“.....So do I...”

We were worrying over how we should break the news to Angelica and Jessica.....

.

.

The next day, after breakfast, we went to Angelica and Jessica and told the story truthfully, and that we are planning a second meeting the day after.

She almost cried.

I think I should die now.....

Louis and I furtively made eye contact and took the ladies out to the garden, distancing ourselves just enough to be able to see each other but not hear each other.

We were very desperate, you know?

“Angelica, my heart is always with you. The reason why I’m doing something I don’t want to do is to protect you from danger, however small it may be, you see?”

I grabbed her hand and placed my forehead on it.

I tried to convince her so frantically that I did not use the usual ‘I’. (TN: here he uses *ore*, while he usually uses *watashi* to Angelica.)

I was so panicked that I even forgot to use the usual embellishments and rambled on.

“Kyle-sama.....”

My feelings got across, I think. I heard Angelica’s cute voice softly calling my name, so I looked up.

There, Angelica was blushing and smiling.

“I understand..... I..... I trust Kyle-sama!”

The goddess forgave me.

Nothing is scary anymore!

---

Author:

All the cards are finally here, or something?

That was long.

---

---

TN:

Things escalate from here on. Not much sugar until a while later. Which is why I might decide to translate a new series (romance) to ensure a steady supply of sweetness.

Also, a quick question: out of Hughie, Huey and Hewie, which is most common/natural for you?

## Chapter 20: Reincarnators everywhere!?

### Chapter 20: Reincarnators everywhere!?

The six of us spent the afternoon at the dining hall again.

Surprisingly, even without Michelle, the four love interests Hughie, Henry, Jackie and Brad were still quite friendly to each other.

Maybe friendship bloomed while they were around Michelle? Well, there's a reverse harem ongoing, so maybe the men's relationships are not so bad? Even if their true intentions are different, they aren't stupid enough to let it show.....

Then again, it could be that there is an amazing conflict beneath the surface.

Also their attitudes varied greatly here.

First, Hughie, was talking with Brad, the bespectacled bastard, that he was looking this way at all.

Is it just me who's imagining that Hughie's cheeks were blushing in joy?

Hughie..... you..... your rear end, is it alright...?

As for Henry, it still showed that glance as if to say 'I'm planning something!' When I gaze at Henry, he deliberately summons his butler and whispers something, while grinning widely.

That unnatural act reeked of a small fry's smell, it's almost painful to watch.

About the bespectacled bastard.....

I. did. not. see. anything.

What's up with that gaze! What will you do if a women gets pregnant! No, even men might be included! It's just that kind of dangerous sight!?

Ah... my butt has hallucinatory pains.....

Next to me Louis too was aghast, cringing.

After hearing last night's story, we confirmed that it's not just our imagination, so our fear multiplied, you know?

Plus he's a bespectacled bastard. Not someone whose thoughts are really proper.....

Although the dining hall's temperature should be mild, I still get the chills. My skin's full of goosebumps.

Daniel was still diligently pouring tea, but it's not enough. It's as if the tea instantly cools.

Really..... the fearful 'bespectacled bastard's cooler'! Indeed.

Finally, Jackie.....

He was acting quite normally among the four of them. As if he was the air itself. I actually felt disturbed at that scene.

Because, it's amazing that he can ignore those guys and go at his own pace, isn't it? He's not saying anything, just sitting there as if it was the most natural thing in the world, without being conspicuous.

In the game, he was a very self-assertive character, but I can't even guess what his personality is here.

I think it's just not possible if he's not doing it on purpose.

That's why it felt strange to me.

For some reason, he also felt like a reincarnator.

If I and Michelle exist as reincarnators here, it should be prudent to assume that there may be other reincarnators nearby.

When I learnt that Michelle is a reincarnator, the first thing that popped into my head was 'how many more reincarnators are hiding?'

When I was caught up in that accident, there were at least ten more people waiting for the green light.

Of those people, how many died, and how many reincarnated here? And out of them, how many know the game?

I did not have knowledge on the additional contents. Michelle too only heard second-hand about the juicy parts.

If someone who cleared everything like 'Yacchan' was to reincarnate as an enemy, I don't know how I should respond.

If her head is normal, then it's fine, but if she too is unpredictable like a martian it would be troublesome.

And if she's someone who cleared all those contents, is she some fujoshi or what?

It would be nice if that person saw this world as the 'reality', but if she was

thinking that this is 'an extension of the game,' there's no telling what she might do.

Maybe it's best to use my authority to eliminate potential dangers.....  
.....However, how will I differentiate them? If I eliminated someone normal, what will I do about his life?  
Am I to take responsibility?  
The more I think, the more cornered I feel.....

.

.

That evening, I barely ate. My stomach was not normal.  
Seeing Louis, he too seemed to have lost his appetite. He barely touched his meal.  
As it was meaningless to stay in the dining hall, I silently apologised to the farmers and left the hall.

To us who returned feeling very disappointed, Daniel gave us some sweet-flavoured royal milk tea.

"Sugar is good for the brain, sir."

Words overflowing with benevolence and a smile.....  
Today we saw an awesome man's smile!!

"Hey, Louis, were you able to organise your thoughts?"  
"Not very well... shall I say? How about you?"

After enjoying the sweetness that seeped down to our soul, we started revising the facts.

"There are many things I am not sure of, but..... first, there is the possibility that we are targets of Brad's mad sexual desires, and there is the possibility that there are more so-called 'reincarnators'."

Pretending to not have understood everything, I carefully chose my words to the level that Louis can understand.  
This was probably the limit he could process.

"Right..... and also that Michelle wanted cooperation because she felt

endangered. We can make some countermeasures, at least.”

“Is that so..... then, would the only choice left be to use my authority to eliminate them?”

“.....How much of that do you think will work? We are not even sure who are the strange ones.....”

Louis was against the use of my authority to eliminate people. I felt greatly relieved that he was against it.

I also didn't want that to happen. I'd like to refrain from abusing my authority. There are too many consequences, and it is too easy to make mistakes.

“Even if we do it, we have to observe more and purge them all at one..... If there is one suspicious person, it would mean that there are actually about thirty people, so we have to be thorough, won't we?”

.....No, it wasn't that he was against it, he's just merciless. He said so with contempt as if he were crushing some cockroaches, while smiling darkly.

Still, as he said, it's inefficient to eliminate people one by one, and even if there are other reincarnators I can't hastily conclude that they are all weird. If they do not harm us, it really doesn't matter what they do. Then, for now we should prioritise discerning who the enemy is, sounding out potential enemies.

A part of me wants to just leave her be. However, since she was now providing valuable information, I should assist her however I can.

“What do you think about Michelle?”

“Hm..... I don't think it's good to suddenly separate her from those guys. If Henry's personality is indeed like what she described, his volatile personality may just become very dangerous.”

That is true.

That guy is so possessive, to the point of being morbidly obsessed. In the game, too, one wrong move sent you straight to his bad ending.

“Then, should we ask her to continue acting the fool and report to us of the suspicious people who approach her?”

“Right. I believe that may be the best plan for now. Why don't we also make her



act as if she is interested in us, and exchange information then?”

“Ah. Then even if there are misunderstandings over her visits, we will have an excuse, and it will be a bit easier to deal with those guys..... though I really don’t want to be involved with them in any way.”

So we have to satisfy Henry’s possessive desires and quell his jealousy, while building a relationship with Michelle.....

It sounds easy, but it will be very hard to do.....

---

---

TN: One more before I sleep.

|

# Chapter 21: Is everywhere around me a danger zone!?

## Chapter 21: Is everywhere around me a danger zone!?

Author:

In this episode, the pervertedness increases. Steer clear if you don't like these things.

---

After we somehow digested Michelle's story, we decided to start discussing the latest information we gathered.

It's about the thing we left Daniel to. We had asked Daniel to monitor Brad. So we are doing our best to not be directly involved. Well, he is a dangerous person, isn't he?

I don't want to get too close to that pervert nor do I want to be violated by his gaze.

It's not just me, it's also the person I like that's also in danger.....

If it's Daniel, he can take care of everything perfectly, so I can relax and leave him to gather the necessary information.

As we will also be discussing with Michelle, we need to conclude on the direction of the talk, thus there will be many topics this time.

"Brad-sensei seems to have private lessons on etiquette during his extra time. I observed for a while, but it seems that only a few selected students attend that class. On some days, as many as three people enter, and get naked or ropes are used. Some truly innovative education on etiquette, I dare say, sir."

Appearing at the correct moment like always, he poured us a cup of tea while dropping a bomb as if wasn't anything much.

Horrifying. The temperature dropped five degrees!?

I don't think that's a normal etiquette class?

What the heck is that 'pervert gentleman/lady raising class'!?

This a place for noble children to learn the ABCs of social life, not the ABCs of perversion!

I'm not going to say 'Sensei, that's dirty!' like a teenage girl, nor am I planning on criticising people's habits.....

But that's not really acceptable for a teacher, right? Right?

What a ridiculously immoral teacher!

I know that there are no strict taboos on teacher-student romances, but to engage in perverted plays with noble children!?

And to even do it in a group.....

That's weird even to this world's standards.

Is that why he was looking at us?

What despair!

I could feel myself growing paler.

Louis's complexion too turned sallow.

Just imagine his eyes when you're caught by him.

Traumatising, just from imagining it.

"Everyone is taught kindly and fairly, regardless of sex. There may be some hard parts, as I could frequently hear screams..... Oh, and, in the instructor's office, there were photos of Your Highness Kyle, Louis-sama, Angelica-sama and Michelle-sama, but for some reason it was soaked in some sticky fluid."

Looking up as if to remember the details, Daniel drops additional bombs while smiling as if nothing happened.

Daniel turned into a deep blue bomber like the B-29. At the sight of bombs raining, we had nowhere to run to.

Where's the bunker!?

Medic! Quick, mediic!!

I imagined the two of us wearing gas masks and desperately running through a barrage.

We were just 'corpses', frozen and unresponsive.

My hands trembled unconsciously that I spilled the tea and soaked my hand in it. As for Louis, the table was drinking the tea in his stead as he outright dropped the cup.

Daniel, looking delighted, promptly cleaned the table and brewed new tea.

"Well, I believe it would be best if Your Highness and your friends did not approach him. His attention is on Your Highness, Louis-sama and Angelica-sama,

so I would also recommend you to act separately from Douglas-sama and April-sama..... Well, I shall continue to observe him so if there are any interes..... strange developments, I will report them as soon as possible.

Daniel, you were about to say interesting, weren't you.....? He looked somewhat animated too.

He looks like he's enjoying this more than usual.....

You really are enjoying this, right? You're enjoying our scared reactions, aren't you!?

Is it so fun to see our behinds in predicament?

My complaints showed through on my face.  
To my annoyed expression, Daniel lifted an eyebrow.

"Your Highness, do you wish to open the doors to 'an unknown world'? I would not recommend that the heir of a country to take it, but I can apply for a private session, if you would like, sir?

He gallantly flashed a suggestive smile.

"No, it's fine. 'Daniel' must continue the observation. Sorry, I must beg you."

Smoothly hiding my butt with both hands, I plead Daniel in a wooden tone.

Scary 'private lessons' .....

"Let's refrain from going outside the office tomorrow. It may be alright if it is just us, but Angelica is also targeted, and who knows when he might lay his eyes on Jessica and April..... We also need to inform Douglas and April about future events."

Louis said, as if he were talking to himself while staring off into the distance. I also noticed that he too was bringing both his hands to butt to hide it.

"Indeed. We cannot yet understand that man..... We should try to not be involved with him as much as possible..... I'll move behind the scenes to get him out of the school, too."

I look at Louis, my eyes filled with resolve.

"That subterfuge, I'll cooperate as much as I can, so that it can get through a little quicker, however little it may be!"

A strong positive response came back along with a smile.

The two of us were making eye contact and nodding strongly, while hiding our butts with our hands.....

.

Now, about that scheming prince Henry.

It's not certain yet, but it seems as though he is planning something by using Brad.

.....What the heck, scary.....

And again, also reeking of a small fry.

Normally, wouldn't another prince like him use political trickery?

The way a yandere's brain works is just different.

Using a double edged sword to eliminate an enemy!

A degenerate is likely to act out of prediction, why does he want to use something like that as his pawn?

Is he confident that he can control such a degenerate?

An image of a disaster from his inability to control the degenerate flashed through my head.

I felt an indescribable fear, and hugged myself as I shivered in fear.

---

Author:

The perversion level is increasing recently, and it's become harder for some characters.....

---

---

TN: Adding some bondage to the mix for extra scary, eh?

## Chapter 22: A sweet break after a long time.

### Chapter 22: A sweet break after a long time.

Author:

Some sugar as final freshener.

---

The next day, we acted stealthily to not be noticed by them.

It felt like running from the enemy, but sacrifices must be made for a greater plan. (TN: Raw says 'stomach and back are unexchangeable', a Japanese proverb.)

Isn't it quite natural to be wary of them after hearing yesterday's story? As for getting rid of Brad, I pleaded my father and the dean to 'react as quick as possible'.

For Henry, I'm planning to send him back to his country if he goes over the bound.

However, although he may be just the 'fifth' prince, I can't just halt his education and deport him. I'd like to avoid any diplomatic problems.

Also, as this was a very important decision, I made some time for just us two.

.

"Okay, Angelica? Please don't get close to Brad."

Visiting her room after breakfast, I grabbed both of her hands when she was bewildered by the sudden visit and admonition.

Pulling those hands close to my chest, I drew my face in closer and waited for her reply. As though she felt something unusual in my urgency, Angelica's eyes darted all over the place as she blushed deep red. When I gripped her hands tighter for a reply, soon she replied, "yes, I understand....." in a small voice.

Relieved at her answer, I put my forehead on hers. I felt Angelica flinch, but she did not seem to dislike it. Clearly, it must be because I sighed when our faces were close together, that my breath startled her.

Even her presence is cute..... I'm worried.

Originally, I didn't care about much else as long as Angelica was safe. Well, I am still thinking about Louis and Jessica's safety, though? However, now I know that he is not just an ordinary bespectacled bastard, but a calamity-level bespectacled bastard, the first priority is her safety. Louis should also be taking precautions for her safety, so there should not be that much problem.

I did petition the school to replace Brad, but as the students who suffered his venomous fangs are of high status, I can't rush and make this matter public. In addition, it's also a problem that all the students who went to the room were making those eyes. As this is a sensitive case, the school is having trouble dealing with this, so I can't expect a quick response. Father also replied, 'Don't expect any quick actions. As the next emperor, hang on until the case is somehow resolved,' something I did not like. I did expect that the answer might be like this..... but isn't this a bit much? This isn't something you say to your son who's become a target of a pervert! Even that Daniel just smiled bitterly to father's reply, you know? Though, afterwards, he said, 'Could it be a test for Your Highness and me?' and made a frightening smile!

Sometime in the future, something bad's going to happen to you, father! No, I hope it actually happens! I'll put a curse so that it will actually happen!!!

Since we do not know when Brad will be disposed, I have to first explain to Angelica how dangerous he is! It's not something to tell a lady so it will be hard to convey, but I have to make her think 'I don't want to approach him,' at the very least.....

Thinking so, I opened my eyes, my forehead still touching hers, and stared into her violet eyes.

"I mean it? That guy is dangerous on many levels. There are many reports of students falling prey to his venom. Currently, we are doing everything we can..... but we cannot expect this to be solved quickly."

At a distance close enough for our lips to almost touch, I told her the current

situation.

“So please, stay out of his sight, okay?”

Additionally, when I attempted to get her answer while spoiling her, Angelica froze in place.

Her face was bright red like a tomato, repeatedly opening and closing her mouth in shallow breaths.

Is she shy?

Isn't she too cute!?

However..... did she not hear? Then let's try once more.

“Promise? .....If, you break our promise and put yourself in danger.....”

I took my forehead off her, and drew my lips in close to her ear.

“I will punish you, alright?”

I then made a light smacking sound in addition to my whispering.

Finally, I kissed her forehead, let her hands go and locked our gaze, while asking, “Promise?”

Angelica nodded silently like a broken doll, and froze up just like that.

I left her alone in the room and took my leave, while saying, “Then, see you at the office,” informing her of the meeting place.

.

After I exited her chamber, I repeated that scene in my head. The more I chew it, the tastier it gets, and my smile just won't stop.

What is that reaction?

It's way too cute!?

Since I could not meet her recently, it really heals me!

Ah~! Really, I want to touch her once a day~!!

Even ten minutes are fine, I want some time everyday.

While I was suffering from Angelica's cuteness, Louis appeared out from a nearby room.

He probably was in Jessica's room.

Seeing that incessant smile, he too probably had some sweet time.



I sent him a thumbs-up. Of course, shouldn't even have to mention that I received the same sign.

.

Today was a good day.

I received energy from Angelica! (From her forehead)

I also did not encounter the great king of terror as I ran away into the office, so I avoided receiving mental damage.

Somehow, I mind feels clear.

It's as if I got the Super Star (TN: Mario). I feel like I can instakill Henry and the bespectacled bastard now.

.....No, I just feel as if I can, I'm not really going to do that, you know?

.

As we were in such a happy state, the second meeting progressed very smoothly.

First we told Michelle of the conversation yesterday.

While advising her to manipulate Henry to avoid Brad, we told her of the possibility of more reincarnators and the fact that it was hard to discern whether they are allies or enemies.

Thus, even if she found someone suspicious of being reincarnators, we told her to not contact them directly like she did with us.

And most importantly.....

That 'Yacchan' could also be reincarnated here. If she is, then she will surely become an ally of Michelle.

So I told her to stare up at the sky and murmur 'Yacchan'.

If she is indeed reincarnated, she will notice it.

.

Now that my head was clear, I thought up a brilliant plan to keep Brad in check!

I told Daniel to deliberately reveal himself while he's observing Brad. Even if it's not 24 hours a day, just by letting him know that he is under surveillance his scope of activity will be greatly reduced.

People of this world all know about the butlers' abilities. They know better than to act rashly in front of such cheat ability holders.

In this plan, I also enlisted the assistance of Louis's butler.

Since it will be more effective if he sees that there are more than one spy around him!

Though, the thing is, the expression Daniel made was..... extremely frightening.

He was staring off into the distance like a predator that found new prey.

By the time he returned his gaze to me, it was the usual mischievous look, so that was not directed to me.

He probably saw the future.

“Understood, sir. I'll take action with all my might.....”

Daniel's face then was more elegant than usual, that is was both more terrifying and beautiful.

Whoever it is, my condolences to the prey.....

---

Author: Daniel started up.

---

---

TN:

FINAL FRESHNER!?!? What!? Nooo...

Okay I'll be off translating the other thing for the next one.

And on another tangent, I recently read *The Remains of the Day* by Kazuo Ishiguro. It's a butler story of postwar England. I can only say this: I really like butlers...

## Chapter 23: An interesting development?

### Chapter 23: An interesting development?

Author:

Recently I've writing too much perverted stuff that, although it was fun, my HP is at a dangerous level.

My HP is so low that it will be over in one shot, so please go easy on me.

---

Eight days passed since the last conversation. Since we set the next meeting to be after ten days, we won't be having any meetings for the next two days. We decided to gather more information as well as deduce what we can until the next meeting.

Thanks to that, our usual teatime at the dining hall revived. I still don't like having to be exposed to the pervert's sight, but it's better than relying on Daniel for everything.

Getting information from someone else and seeing with my own eyes is different, and I could concoct a more effective plan.

I also want everyone to realise how perverted and dangerous Brad is. I already told them to not approach him along with the reason why not, but I thought that might not be enough.

Thus, although it may be dangerous, I thought I should show his nature to everyone. If they feel for themselves his abnormality, I don't think anyone will approach him on their own.

Though, it didn't seem like anything bad was going to happen just by getting into his sight, and it didn't seem like a plan was undergoing.

If there is anything 'strange'.....

It would be that I could feel his sleazy gaze when Daniel is serving us tea? To me, it felt as though he was targetting at Daniel.....

If that is the case..... then he is one really reckless person.....

When Daniel appears, the air around Brad changes. Maybe I'm just imagining it, but even his glasses seem to shine brighter than usual.....

I saw hallucinations of purple roses every time too, making my face twitch.

Just what is that? That mood of an aesthete.....

I'm quite sure that Daniel too felt is gaze, but neither his expression nor his behaviour changed.

Though for me, I felt frightened at that consistency.

It's as if he's just fanning the flames.

I can't help but think that if you smile at me like that?

You're instigating Brad, right?

Daniel-san, please don't involve me in that.....

.

Then, about Michelle.....

For some reason, her distance with Jackie, the out of focus character, was closing in.

From the start, Jackie was her follower, but he was not very enthusiastic.

It felt like he was doing 'because he's in the group', since he was never that close with Michelle's other followers.

However, I can feel a sweet mood between them as of late.

Additionally, he's somewhat balancing it so that he's not fanning the flames of jealousy, sorta?

.

If the yandere Henry's distance with Michelle is either too close or too far, he will go on a rampage of jealousy and possessiveness, so we have to tread lightly around him.

If he does go on a rampage at this level, it's probably straight to the imprisonment course.

As for the bespectacled bastard Brad, since there is a high chance that he will kidnap people, if he becomes envious there is a possibility that he will become an even more dangerous yandere than Henry.

Brad route's happy end is 'a happy married life where Brad is brutish yet kind', but if it's the bad end, 'she is trained by that brute and live out her life like a slave'.

According to Michelle, it's possible to be trained as a 'human toilet' in the R-18 edition.

The spoiled brat Hughie also has the possibility to fling about in anger if he's instigated.

In his happy end, they become a cute couple, like some high school students. However, in the bad end, Hughie stalks Michelle and ultimately kills her.

As reference, here are the endings of other characters.

First, in the happy ending with Prince Kyle, Angelica is married away to some other country and Michelle becomes the legal wife.

In the bad end, she becomes his concubine, but that's it. She doesn't receive his love, she doesn't have authority in the palace, and she couldn't even bear a child.

It sorta looks as if a dangerous was quarantined as a concubine.....

Although he's already out of the picture, Robert is the easiest conquer. Most choices raise his affection, that it's actually harder to get the bad end, or even the normal end.

In some way, he's the biggest obstacle to clearing the whole game.

In the happy ending, Michelle becomes the wife of the Royal Guard Captain, receiving even the blessing of Jessica.

In this ending, Jessica says, 'I'll also be happier than Robert-sama,' but now I know what that meant.

Louis probably did some things behind the scenes.

As for the extremely rare bad ending, it only happens if Michelle badmouths Jessica in front of her.

This is quite hard, as you have to find Jessica within three days after the annulment of betrothal even.

Also, if you can improve your relation with Jessica, the story progresses to the normal ending.

Somehow..... in Robert's route, the shadow of Louis is ubiquitous.

Douglas.

In the happy ending, he gets over his past well, and the two of them live a peaceful life, while Douglas becomes the advisor to the prince.

In the bad ending, unable to get over the past, Douglas treats Michelle like a doll,

as a substitute for his dead fiancée.

In retrospect, his state at the annulment event might have been the overture for heading into the bad ending.

Now, about the topic of debate, Jackie.

His route is rather unusual. In the happy ending he settles in the Empire and they live happily.

In the bad ending, he goes into exile, wandering the lands like an adventurer.

.

As to how the normal ending is achieved.

It's possible to achieve normal ending with any character by raising the affection level above a certain threshold, but not becoming lovers.

However, in Michelle's case, she raised the affection levels to the maximum when she was Bitch, so there is no possibility of a normal ending.

They're all yanderes, does that mean Bitch managed them all with her natural abilities.....

I don't it's possible for the current Michelle to do that. She's too tenderhearted for this. It's too much of a burden for an ordinary Japanese high school girl.

That's why I ordered Daniel to reveal his presence, so they get the message, 'I'm watching you. Don't try anything funny.'

I hope this keeps them on check, at least a little, so that Michelle may be a little safer.

However, Michelle was unexpected good at controlling them.

Quite amazing.

I could no longer find that awkward she had when she just reincarnated, nor does she feel like Bitch.

At first, I thought she was dealing with the situation quite well thanks to the merged memories.....

But upon further observation, that was not the case.

I think Jackie is controlling everything behind the scenes.

He smoothly creates space for himself and Michelle, while taking care not to get too close to her.....

He's acting so naturally and stealthily, I don't think anyone noticed yet, really?

Well, Michelle knows and is moving to his direction, so maybe they're planning in advance?

I could also feel some resolve in Jackie's blue-grey eyes when he looks at Michelle.

It's the eyes that Louis and I have towards Jessica and Angelica, respectively. 'I'll protect her.'

From that gaze, I could tell that he's on Michelle's side.

However, to protect Michelle, he looks like he's willing to sacrifice us, so we can't yet say that he is ally.

Still, since we can't openly help Michelle, I'm thankful that he's Michelle's ally.

Already, I'm like, 'I leave Michelle to you!'

Could he be a reincarnator?

My suspicions grew stronger every day. However, the next meeting is tomorrow.

Well, I'll leave that for tomorrow, and I'll focus on observation for now, to gather more information.

For example, Henry's butler, who's been watching us recently.....

Daniel was worried about it too.

Butlers have their 'domain', so even if they are ordered by their masters, they to don't involve themselves in war or crime.

So I don't think that they will try anything drastic, but his gaze is disturbing.....

Henry too must have seen our reactions, for he was talking about us to his butler.

Without a doubt, Henry is scheming something with his butler.

Well, since I'm also using my butler it's not strange for him to do so as well. It's just the way he's using him.

It's different, using a butler for protection and using a butler for schemes.

I don't think butlers, who value the 'domain', will lend a hand to that, so I don't think that it's going to be a serious problem.....

But I should keep it in mind.

.

.

The day of the information exchange.

The visitor was not just Michelle, but also another man, whom we expected to a certain extent: Jackie.

---

Author:

If I die, since I don't have enough G to go to church, please cast Kazing on me.  
It has 100% chance to work unlike Zing. (Dragon Quest reference)

---

Translator:

Gosh, this one was long. Enjoy!



# Idle Talk: I thought I reincarnated into the otome game I yearned for, but isn't this a checkmate?

**Idle Talk: I thought I reincarnated into the otome game I yearned for, but isn't this a checkmate?**

Translator: I'm not going to translate the author's ramblings anymore, it's irrelevant and difficult to translate. Unless it's relevant.

---

I'm Oomori Chino, 17 years old. I am a high school girl in the flower of my youth..... or was.

On that day, Yacchan and I were heading to the station to get to school like usual.

The topic of our chat was of course about the popular game 'I'll Risk Everything for You'.

Since Yacchan completed the prerelease PC version already, she was playing the additional contents. The additional contents are rated R-18, and apparently had very obscene contents..... I was somewhat shocked at Yacchan who was saying such obscene things with a straight face. Still, I was sorta interested, so I didn't stop her.

Yacchan is one of the so called fujoshi, so there's no limit to her dirty talks.....

I was playing on a home video game console so I couldn't play the additional contents. Before that, I haven't even finished the vanilla version.....

Yacchan was very helpful. She was more detailed than the walkthrough sites. Like, 'this choice leads to that scene in the added edition,' or 'by choosing the sweet choices, the love interest's affection rates become easier to raise,' or so, analysing additional information that's not written on none of the walkthrough sites or books!

To me who was challenging my lovely Kyle-sama's route, her words were like the words of God.

While we were waiting for the light to change, we were so avidly talking about the game, so we did not see the truck until the very last moment.

.

When I came to, I was having a dream of playing games. I was the protagonist, and was getting friendly with the love interests. I took it easy, watching the dream, thinking, 'Ah, I know this scene,' or 'This was the choice right~.' It seemed I was playing the harem route. However, it looked different from the game's harem route..... Since it was a dream, maybe the blank spaces are being filled in with my imagination.....

Due to that accident, I seemed to be in a critical condition. I could not open my eyes, but I somehow understood that I was in hospital. I faintly heard my parents and my friends weeping and telling me something every time. Since I could not make out the details, I was worried since I could not tell whether Yacchan was alright.

Most of the time, my consciousness stayed in the room, but sometimes I felt faint as if I was going into deep sleep, and at those times I always saw dream of the game.

I was happy that I was the protagonist, but I was disappointed in the protagonist's personality. What do you mean 'Eh!?' ..... Well, this must be because this is a dream, or so I consoled myself. The personalities of the love interests were also very different, so some were disappointing as well. But there were characters that were more moe than in the game.

In Kyle-sama's case, I was hurt because he was so cold to the protagonist. However, his gaze towards his fiancée was so sweet..... I was actually more delighted by that clichéd setting of 'pampering and cherishing his fiancée', and my heart beat faster.

Robert was the usual easy character, but I was turned off at how he was much more of a musclehead he was.

Brad, too, felt more like a perverted criminal than as bespectacled bastard, so I was really turned off by him.....

Instead, there were others who are not love interests but nevertheless were very handsome, a sight for sore eyes. Kyle-sama's friend Louis and the butler Daniel, they were all very dashing. There were also many other handsome people in the background, that I enjoyed

many a romantic episodes.

Though I really didn't like the protagonist's bitchy behaviour.....

While watching the dream that didn't go as I wished, I started thinking, 'am I going to die?' Since the time that my consciousness stayed in the hospital room was decreasing.

By the time I started thinking, 'at this rate, I'm going to enter Henry route.....' my consciousness spent more time in the dreams than in the hospital room.

Ah, soon, I'll die..... In the end, I couldn't finish the game.  
I wanted to at least see the ending of the game.

Or so I absentmindedly thought.  
To me back then, 'do something about the protagonist!' is what I want to say to you!!

One day, I started living fully in the dream. Before, I was just watching the game progress, but now I was in full control.  
I was confused. When I realised, 'ah, this the the trendy otome game revival scenario,' I was more scared than happy.  
Well, I was heading toward's Henry's endings, which have no real happy endings and only shouted 'checkmate!' you know?  
That feeling of despair I felt is indescribable.

When I was panicking over my future as a reincarnator, something popped into my mind.  
If there is reincarnation, then there might be other reincarnators.  
Then, there was one truly suspicious person!  
That's right! Kyle-sama!!  
Also, Louis-sama is suspect as well!

Thinking that, I couldn't sit still so I went to check straightaway! If they're reincarnators, then they might just help me!?  
However..... my prediction was wrong. They both said that they're not reincarnators.....

Nonetheless! The two of them took interest in my story, trusted me and even thought up some plans for me!  
They're so sweet!? I'm moved!!

Since they disliked ‘Michelle’ before my reincarnation, I didn’t expect them to be so kind. So I was really happy.

“Let us cooperate.”

When he said that, I was really relieved, you know?

I no longer had to worry over it on my own. Just having someone to talk to, it was very reassuring.....

So I did as they said, staring off into the sky and muttered “Yacchan.....” to myself.

About four days since I did that, Jackie approached me.

“You’re always murmuring that, who’s she?”

When he asked me, I grew quite restless.

I wanted to consult the two of them, but the next meeting was after ten days, and I was told not to draw the ire of Henry and Brad.....

Wawawawawawhat should I do.....

Jackie, as one of the love interests, was one of my followers, but felt distant. It seemed as though he had some other plans.

To have my strange behaviour be pointed out by such a suspicious person..... I ended up averting gaze around.

To my overreaction, Jackie merely smiled and said, “You don’t have to rely on people who are not here, I can help,” in a soft tone.....

At that moment, a bell rung in my head and heart tightened up.....

Was I such an easy woman? orz

---

Author:

Next chapter is idle talk again.

---

Translator:

Bugger, author. Just when I decided I’m not going to translate your ramblings. By the way, poor girl.

# Idle talk: While I was observing out of interest, I fell for the ‘reincarnator’.

<<Idle talk>> While I was observing out of interest, I fell for the ‘reincarnator’.

Author:

The setting is a little grotesque this time so steer clear if you have no resistance to this.

---

I am Jackie Pyne, 17 years old. I am from a country neighbouring the Empire, Uruhara, and I am the second son of a Duke there. Truth be told, I have a secret.

From a young age, I had the ability of ‘future vision’. At some moments, I see images in my head for a brief period of time.

My first future vision happened when I was 10. It was my little sister’s future. During my little sister’s seventh birthday party, a vision popped into my head while I was watching my sweet little sister’s face.

I saw in those images, the image of a woman being violated in a prison cell.

From the sudden vision, I became petrified. Don’t blame me. I was only 10 years old..... I don’t think even adults would be fine after seeing such images. Because of my sudden state of panic, the party was ruined, and I also had to be in bed for about three days.

While I was lying down, I was wondering who the people I saw in the vision were. Then I realised that the man in the vision was similar to the country’s fifth prince, Prince Henry.

That face was just like Prince Henry, just older.

It was nauseating.

I did not know who the woman was yet, but a disturbing feeling was still weighing on me.....

From then on, I saw more visions.

My family used this power to strengthen the authority our house had. Since my power was beneficial to the house, they accepted it easily.

As I continued to have visions, I came to realise that I saw the futures of people whom I saw their faces.

Also, I found that my little sister started to resemble the woman in the vision. By the time I was certain that the woman in the vision is indeed my sister, talks of betrothal between my little sister and Henry-sama were underway.

Immediately, I told my father of the vision I had and pleaded him to stop the betrothal talks.

Between my little sister's happiness and political marriage, my father is the kind to prioritise the former. Even if he has to overdo himself, he would gladly stop the talks.

However, I still felt uneasy. Well, we are dealing with royalty, you know? If they tell us to marry them, we, as their subjects, cannot defy them. Fortunately, my little sister and her childhood friend were mutually in love. We immediately betrothed the two of them, but we could not yet lower our guards. Normally, one would not go after someone who already has a fiancé. However, we were dealing with that Prince Henry. Thus, my father and I plotted up a plan.....

After waiting until I turned 15 (as Prince Henry was the same age), we proposed that Prince Henry and I study abroad. In context of international exchange, we had the pretext of 'preparing for the future' in Prince Henry's case. Furthermore, as a neighbouring country's prince was a year younger than us, we would become alumni from the same school, helping diplomacy in the future.

Of course, the King accepted our proposal. As we were studying abroad together, I could also keep an eye on Prince Henry. If in any way Prince Henry causes diplomatic unrest, I was to use all my power to stop further friction that could potentially lead to war. The people who knew of my future vision ability were only three people: my father, the king and the first prince, heir apparent to the throne. Thus I received these secret orders.

Though Prince Henry is just the fifth prince, he is the second son of the lawful wife so he was being a nuisance in the palace without anyone to rein him in. As he was ruining the reputation of the whole royalty, the first prince was

concerned about it. He reexamined the education plans with his mother, attaching a superb butler as well, but things did not go well.

Because of that butler, he actually started using subterfuge, that the problems did not show themselves on the surface. He was becoming even more troublesome.

Since he was hiding his deviations well, they couldn't even chastise him openly. However, what if he was to study abroad?

The neighbouring country's prince is said to have the best butler in history as his. Then if Henry caused trouble in school, there may be some complaints filed to our country. Then causing Henry's downfall would be easier.

Thus, although I monitor and report Henry's actions to the country, I was to just watch even if caused trouble.

I was to move only if he were to try something to the neighbouring country's prince, in order to prevent war from breaking out.

During the time we are to study abroad, talks of betrothal of my sister is to proceed smoothly, that she may be married as soon as she turns 16.

In addition, I was to find another woman for the prince while abroad. Of course, in the case I could not, we planned to mention my sister's betrothal in high society until she was actually married.

During this stay, my role was diverse.

First, I began with being seen as a harmless being from Prince Henry. Within a year, Prince Henry treated me like air.

Nothing much happened during the first two years. I was also ignoring the order to find a woman for Prince Henry.

I mean, I didn't want to marry off an innocent woman to someone like that.....

I did not have any special connections with the other prince as well, so I thought my school was going to end quietly.

However, it all changed when the new students came in.

There was one among them who wagged her tail to anyone with power, like a prostitute.

She made five men, including Prince Henry, her followers within such a short time. I must say I was amazed at that. To have even captivated that Prince Henry.....

Since it would be troubling for me if Prince Henry became an international disgrace, I decided to melt in within them.

She's just a child of a lowly baron and a concubine, so at first I thought it would not be so bad.

However, among her followers, three of them were the imperial prince's childhood friends, as well as candidates for the country's council.

In addition, Michelle was also aiming for that prince as well.

This is.....

Isn't this an absurd problem?

I'll have to keep an eye on Michelle as well.....

Thus, I also started observing Michelle in addition to Henry.

There was a fact I discovered I started observing her.

Michelle changed greatly every time, and she was an unprecedented case where her future changed every time I saw her visions.

A heartwarming future, a ruined future, a happy future, a future where she's imprisoned by Henry.....

Taking interest in Michelle who showed many different future, I started to enjoy observing Michelle.

While I was continuing this interesting surveillance, at some point Henry's obsession for Michelle grew manifold. Moreover, Henry harboured hostility to Prince Kyle.

Looking at Henry's obsession, I wondered, 'Is the future set in stone now?', but suddenly I could not see Michelle's future.

Then she completely changed too.

Her behaviour was still the same. However, I saw that she started panicking sometimes, and that she was doing her best to keep that facade.

Also, one day, she appeared to be avoiding Henry and Brad.

She seemed to be thinking that she was treating them the same, but they too felt her change.

Hey, you! That just has reverse effects!

If you do that, only a grim future awaits you? What happened, weren't you keeping the balance so well?



Thinking so, I furtively glanced at her.

From a certain point, she started staring off into the distance murmuring 'Yacchan'. Her voice was small, but I could tell that she wanted help. So I took interest in that and investigated whether there were anyone called 'Yacchan' in school, but I found non.....

I felt pity for her every time she said those words pleading for help, and for some reason I felt jealous too.

I seem to have gotten attached to her while I was enjoying my observations of her.

So I ended up blurting it out.

"You don't have to rely on people who are not here, I can help."

She must have been her wit's end. Hearing my word's she started crying. Before I realised it, I was already embracing and consoling her.

Is this really just a mere attachment?

I was confused at my own actions, but I calmed her down and listened to her story regardless. Then she started saying something strange. She said,

"I'm a reincarnator."

Or so. At first, I thought she had a screw loose, but it didn't look that way.....

As we talked about her strange situation, a strong interest for her grew in me. I also felt how innocent her mind was.

Her innocence felt even younger than my younger sister. She was too innocent for high society. Even in this school her mental fortitude was too weak.

If this is because of the thing that she calls 'reincarnation,' then she needs help. However, she doesn't even have her own butler.

Then I need to protect her.....

When I thought that, I finally realised that I fell for her.....

I did not feel a single ounce of guilt, and unlike my task regarding Henry, I felt very motivated.

---

Author:

We're returning to the main chapters next time.



# Chapter 24: It's fine for riajuus to go and explode!

## Chapter 24: It's fine for riajuus to go and explode!

(TN: [Just in case you don't know what riajuu is.](#))

Author:

The story will progress quickly from here on.

There will be violent depictions and obscene depictions, so be careful if you're weak to these.

---

The discussion was progressing unexpectedly well, even with Jackie. I was surprised the most at his ability of predicting the future. Even in the neighbouring country, only three people seem to know.

However, the ability isn't perfect. It's rather unreliable, since the visions are quite quick to change.

Is it fine to reveal such an important secret to me!?

Or so I thought, but he said, 'I need to reveal my secret if you are to trust me,' so I thought it can't be helped.

As we were talking, Daniel, who usually doesn't voice his opinion, spoke out.

".....Daemon.....for an ancestor, I believe....."

He murmured a little excitedly.

A daemon ancestor....., eh.....?

Jackie's grey blue eyes widened in surprise, and he stared at Daniel. Come to think of it, their eye colours are very similar. Other butler's have the same colour, maybe that's characteristic of daemons.

Could hair colour also be a factor?

Jackie has steel blue hair, while Daniel a silvery dark blue hair close to black.

Considering the fact that butlers' hair colours are shades of blue..... hair colour might be an indicator of magic power.

"So my power originates from daemons..."

Hearing Daniel, Jackie's expression softened.

He probably was very confused and had trouble with his ability from a young age.....

.  
.

We then listened to reports of their recent movements while enjoying tea.....  
Some of the new information Jackie brought was rather disturbing.

“Prince Henry seems to be planning to hand Prince Kyle over to Brad, you see?  
.....Oh, incidentally, also Louis-dono too..... They said their plans went awry  
because of you. They bear quite the grudge against you.”

He said that so casually as if he was talking about tomorrow’s weather!!  
Th, that’s..... that’s that right!?  
Uuh..... my butt.....

No———!!

Really, I wish they didn’t! Just what is it!?  
Just what is it that I did to you?  
Why am I so hated by you?  
What do you mean ‘their plans went awry because of me’??

While I was in full panic in my head, Jackie sipped tea leisurely. Then  
sometimes, he would fool around with Michelle, holding her hand, tickling her  
hand and all that. Michelle indeed looked like ‘a high school girl unused to men’.  
.....This man is..... without a doubt, a riajuu!

You know, Louis and I can’t even have a date because we’re so busy?  
Quite depressing, right?  
But then! You’re fooling around here.....

Riajuu go explode!!

After I cursed the two of them looked at Louis, he was making empty eyes.  
I understand your feelings!!  
I want to have a date with Angelica, too. I want to see her blush!  
I want to return to my riajuu like!

.....Or so I say, but for the two of them, they barely have any time to play

around. If they do that out in the open, then they'll go straight to the bad end. Since they can only be like this here, I have to be generous here.....

Jackie smiled at me gleefully as though he knew everything. But in his eyes, there was no lightness in it, just determination.

I'm sure he is trying to what kind of person I am.

His rude attitude towards a prince is probably to gauge me. For me, anything goes as long as he's not my enemy.

Then Jackie said jokingly, though his eyes were full of determination.

"I want keep a lid on Prince Henry~. .... So, can you help?"

"So are you telling me to become a bait?"

A ridiculous request came. What kind of punishment game is this.

I couldn't whether he was serious or joking. Without saying a word, I just stared at Jackie to discern his real intention.

However, Louis, who was to become bait as well, quickly snapped out of his dazed state and retorted to Jackie.

"Well, simply said, yes."

"If we become bait, will you protect our chastity?"

"Please take care of that yourself..... even if you couldn't... you might just a door to a new world?"

"Open them yourself. I do not need that world."

.....Scary conversation, oi.

As he knows just how dangerous Brad is, Louis was threatening Jackie with a ferocious expression.

Even then, Jackie kept his aloof attitude and responded accordingly.

From that attitude, I could tell that Jackie is going to be useful. I think there are some problems with his personality, but who cares.

However..... to their grim conversation, Michelle ended up getting scared, you know?

I'm also very scared at their 'Huhuhuhuhu' and 'Hahahahaha'.

What kind of demonic conference is this.

You're even more black-hearted than Daniel, aren't you?

However.....

I'm not sure how serious Jackie is, but a baiting plan?

Of course, if he does something to me, a prince of the Empire, he won't get away easily. We could possibly swoop both Henry and Brad out of the game at once.

Still, it's a risky plan.....

Michelle must be at her limits now. Her mind is just that young and innocent. The moment she fails at deceiving them, the chance that she falls in danger increases manifold.

If I were Jackie, I think I might do everything I can to eliminate those two. Especially when a girl I like is involved.

And, we don't know when and where they might just move.

If I don't take care of this quickly, there's no telling what might happen to Angelica.....

.....Hm.

"Alright. I suppose the baiting plan is fine. However, will they get caught in our trap easily? I hope you have a plan, you are staking the heir apparent of this country, you see?"

When I said yes, Louis looked aghast while Jackie gleefully smiled and looked at Michelle.

I

# Chapter 25: Meticulous that it's scary!

## Chapter 25: Meticulous that it's scary!

Seeing that I did not show antipathy to becoming a bait, the tense atmosphere surrounding Jackie loosened somewhat.

Since it would normally be *lèse majesté* to suggest such a thing to a prince of a country. Though he looked casual, he was in truth rather nervous.

Even so, he must have been quite desperate, to bet on my response.....

It just meant that we are in dire straits 'now'.

According to Jackie, Henry and Brad's aims do not match. Henry strongly desires to bring harm to 'me'. In contrast, Brad is fine with whomever.

Thus, wanting to eliminate 'me', he planned on handing me over to Brad as tribute.

For example, say that Louis and I were caught just as Henry planned. Then, Henry's objective is achieved. Also, upon learning that her brother and I are caught, Angelica will most definitely dive into the enemy's position, without anything.....

If Louis and I get caught, it would also mean that Daniel will have his hands tied. Then Brad's objective too will be achieved.....

Quite an intricate plan for Henry.

Then, what benefits do we get if we become bait?

The targets of Brad's obsession is currently Louis, Daniel(?), Angelica, Michelle and me.

And in this situation in which we do not know who he will aim for nor when he will strike, it's hard to deal with that.

However, if we take advantage of Henry's plan, then the target becomes limited to Louis and me.

In addition, by Jackie being there, we can also learn beforehand how and when they will make their move. It will be much easier to plan countermeasures if we know details of their plans.

And if it's Louis or me, even if we're actually caught, we'll somehow manage.

As long as we endure some sexual harassment and learn of their plans, I have absolute confidence that Daniel will do something.

Anyhow, I just want to prevent Angelica from becoming a target herself! Thus, it's best to take advantage of Jackie's proposal.

"One that would have the fruit must climb the tree," they say. I'll take this chance and crush them all in one fell swoop! (TN: raw says, 虎穴に入らずば虎児を得ず, which in a direct translation would mean, 'one that would catch tiger cubs must enter a tiger's den.')

Let's put some spirit into it, and steer the talk towards the baiting!

.

"That idiot Prince, he plans to kidnap Your Highness and Louis-dono while Your Highness's butler Daniel is keeping an eye on Brad. They also want my help in it, to lure you into the room, apparently."

Huh? What's with that child's trickery. Do they really think that they can get away with such a lax plan?

Still reeking of a small fry, Henry.....

"Do you not think that is a trap? Maybe they have already planned a step or two further....."

"H~m..... really? They were preparing anti-magic barriers for the room..... as well as some strong aphrodisiacs from our country and some various prince collections? I thought they were really strange, to be able to chat happily while holding such suspicious things....."

What the hell! Scary!!

Jackie said that casually, but he was gently pressing his forehead and shaking his head in disgust.

I also ended up grabbing my head in pain.

I had thought there might be something more, but there did not seem to be.

Just vulgar? Just 'suspicious'?

Using such things on us!?

The three of us stared off into the distance. Michelle probably didn't understand our conversation, just having a blank expression.



If they're using such things, I have to do something quickly before anything happens to Angelica!!

My Angelica is going to get tainted just by thinking of those things! What if she get's pregnant!?

.

".....Fuu. I knew that it'd come down to this, but the question is, when are we going to do it? We have to prepare some things too..... various things, like guards, or guards! Or guards!"

Louis too must have been thinking of Jessica. He looks sickly. Also, we too are placed in maximum danger.

If there is an anti-magic barrier, then does that mean that we can't use our 'trump card Daniel'?

Then, doesn't that mean we don't have any options?

Anti-magic tools are designed to counter Daemons and magic tools. As long as one is in this barrier, only physical ability is not hampered.

I have confidence in my swordsmanship, and I also know some martial arts. I can protect myself to some extent.

However, if they use aphrodisiacs from the neighbouring country, I'm helpless.....

Their aphrodisiacs are known for being odorless, tasteless and volatile. Thus, it's hard to tell when and where it is being used.

Normally, one would carry around nullifying magic tools, and butlers would prevent harmful substances so there usually is no damage from poison.....

If there is an anti-magic barrier, then one will be rendered helpless against aphrodisiacs.

"I realise that it is a risky proposal. However, if we do not take action now, there will not be any way to help one another in times of need.....

".....Indeed. If we move rashly, we will all be caught....."

"Is this really a problem we can solve by ourselves?"

Trying to find a walkthrough for this impossible game, we got lost in thought for a moment.

But as Louis said, if they've prepared this much, we can't take care of this just by

ourselves.

If we can prove that they're planning to use the tools and aphrodisiacs on us, we can take other measures, but we can't do that.

There are quite a few nobles who use aphrodisiacs to enjoy intercourse. Though some aphrodisiacs are prevented, it's not possible to punish them just with aphrodisiacs.

It's the same with the anti-magic barriers, where nobles without butlers employ those instead.

Since it's possible to use it in tandem with locks to prevent thieves. Also, some anthropophobes and overly-cautious people use them, so we can't easily crack down on them either.

It was the same in Japan, things made for people convenience can be abused for malicious purposes.

The things Henry prepared this time was also like that, just normal stuff.

Just that he's using it for malicious purposes. I wonder if his small fry nature is finally showing it's villainous side.....?

“.....Daniel, are there any good countermeasures or magic tools?

Unable to think up a solution, I put both hands behind my head and stretched back as I asked Daniel for his opinion.

He's the best butler in history, he might know some countermeasures or magic tools to use against barriers.

But if Daniel also doesn't have a plan, we'll have to give up on the baiting plan. Then, the only choice left is to abuse my power.....

If possible, I want to avoid having to resort to that.

I want to avoid the reputation of 'a tyrant prince'. However, even that's a small price to pay for Angelica.....

When I let out a sigh thinking such things, as if to cover it up, Daniel said,

“Then, how about this plan, sir?”

Suggesting a plan proving Daniel's real worth, as a mischievous grin formed on his face.....

---

---

Translator:

Hello, I'm back! Sorry I left without telling you anything. I've been to the mountains, so I couldn't really use the computer that much.  
Plus food poisoning for two days. Do be careful of what you eat during summer, especially humid summers.

I

# Chapter 26: Strength leaving the body

## Chapter 26: Strength leaving the body

“Would it not be better to set up our own traps instead of heading for them?”

Seeing Daniel smiling, I felt as if scales fell from my eyes.

That’s it! We didn’t need to attempt a frontal breakthrough in this impossible game!!

We can just skip the stage, like how they use those pipes!

Louis and Jackie too were gawking at Daniel. They must not have thought of that either.....

We must have been quite restless, to try only frontal assaults.....

I really think Daniel is the best, he does help a lot.

“Certainly there is that..... I, because I could not find a solution on my own, I was thinking that if we could not find a solution here, I would take her and run away.....”

With an inanimate expression, Jackie muttered to himself. As if all strength left his body, he went limp, leaning against the back of the chair. Seeing that, it was painfully clear what sort of resolve he had coming here.

His somewhat resigned attitude was indeed him being resigned.....

Although he was thinking of running away, he did not know what to do next.

First of all, he did not even know where to run to.

However, if he stays here, he’ll have to witness his love fall into hell.

Well, he would grow resigned in such a situation. Actually, he did well to endure until today.

“I suppose I am glad that Kyle and I do not have to risk ourselves anymore..... This will not do. I cannot seem to think straight when she is involved.....”

Louis too went limp, sighing heavily as he leant back and closed his eyes.

That expression was that of relief.

Louis was in love with Jessica from a young age. But when he finally realised his own feelings, she already had a fiancé, Robert. He was thinking that he could no

longer get her, but thanks to that commotion, he miraculously had the chance to get that gem for himself.

Louis is now eliminating any rivals as well as persuading Jessica.

He's probably desperate to not lose her this time.....

“.....Same here..... Just thinking of her being put in danger, all rational thought left me. At such times, I am reminded..... that I am still a shitty brat.....”

Strength left my body too, that I slovenly drooped on the table. I was more tensed up than I thought. I felt much lighter after relaxing.

Because of those surreal perverts, my mental health was devastated.

I'm really glad I have excellent associates.

I can't really do much by myself. If I move on my own, I'm bound to make grave mistakes. Thus it's good that there are advisers beside me to criticise me.

As royalty, one is supposed to build up one's entourage during school.

I have no plans to become a tyrant. I want to delegate tasks to excellent and trustworthy attendants.

Thus, talented people are good and needed for the country.

I need those who can stick to their ideologies while leading the country. I don't need yes-men. I don't need braggarts nor do I need conceited people. I need those who can think.

Currently, I only have Louis and Daniel, but Douglas may join in soon after rehabilitation. Next year, my little brother and Robert's little brother will also enrol.

From what I've heard, their education as my close attendants have already begun.

As for Jackie..... him defecting to my country is also being considered.

This is how my plan is developing so far.

.

As I pondered about the future, Daniel silently brewed more tea.

With perfect timing, Daniel drew my attention back towards the topic. He really is too good.

“As for myself, anti-magic barriers of that calibre have no effect on me, so I shall deal with any threats, sir. I believe you sires may experiment however you

want with your power, sir.”

Daniel reassured us as he refilled our drinks.

Daniel-san..... Aren't you cheating too much?

.

Now that we had the greatest joker known as 'Daniel's backup', we started concocting more plans.

First and foremost, regarding the traps they laid out for us.....

They seem to already know that Michelle and Jackie is visiting us.

Michelle said that she'd like to get closer to me, and Jackie came as a monitor under the pretence of preventing more rivals.

As for others, they thought they would not be allowed in because of their relationship with Louis and me. Thus, Jackie, who had barely any contact with us, was chosen as the watchman by Henry.

Here, Jackie was also ordered to get close to us. They were planning to get Jackie and I closer together over the course of three days, after which he would lead me to Henry's room, or so.....

If I go into Henry's room, it would be easy to capture me with the barriers and aphrodisiacs. And when someone comes to rescue us, they would catch them all.....

Petty trickery.

I thought it would be a more underhanded plan, but like a small fry, the plan is unbalanced.

Still, that is their plan so far, so we will have to think up countermeasures.

With that information as the base, we made many detailed plans.

By the time the meeting was over, it was quite late.

To show that I am on more friendly terms with Michelle, I made Daniel escort her back.

“Take care? ...See you..... tomorrow.”

“.....”

In front of the room, Jackie let such sweet words flow.

In contrast, Michelle was staring at Jackie with anxious eyes.

“It’s alright. I’ll definitely protect you from. So..... please don’t make that face.”

“Okay..... you’ll definitely protect me?”

Well, since this is their normal state, they might have to do this to not raise any suspicion.

I know that.....

But I wish you’d stop doing that in front of us!

Michelle! Stop blushing already!!

Jackie, you too! Those eyes are forbidden!?

I, it’s not like I’m jealous or anything!!

I

# Chapter 27: The early morning date was training for my rationality.

## Chapter 27: The early morning date was training for my rationality.

Author: Increasing sugar content.

---

At the discussion last night, it was decided that we will take advantage of Henry and Brad's trap and lead them to our own trap three days later. For that to work smoothly, we had to explain the whole thing to Angelica and Jessica as well.

Well, how should I say it..... I'm going to enjoy a petit date from the morning!

I, it's not like I thought, 'I want to be with Angelica!' after seeing Jackie and Michelle last night..... it's not like that.

Well, I admit I wanted to sorta confirm that I am indeed a riajuu? But more importantly, I needed to let her know what sort of crisis we were in.

So I discussed this with Louis and came over to meet these two.

However, since Louis would also need some time with Jessica, we distanced ourselves at the garden just enough to not hear each other's voices, and enjoyed our dates..... I mean, enjoyed the explaining..... I mean, we just explained.

".....So, after three days, dangerous events may happen. So I want you to take care. If possible, can you please stay in your room for the whole day?"

We sat on the wooden bench under the tree, the same bench that we sat on the day after the entrance ceremony. I clasped the gloved hands and stared into her amethyst eyes.

In those eyes, I could see a reflection of a pathetic and restless man.

Ah, so I always showed this pathetic face to her.....

My default face is rather handsome, I should take care..... I hope she doesn't think badly of me for showing such pathetic expressions.....

As I stared into her eyes, I saw her pupils waver. She was becoming teary-eyed, and the reflection in her eyes seems to melt as well.

As I gawped at that sight, her eyes closed as if it could not stand the gaze.



That face was the face of 'waiting for a kiss' .....

Before I realised it, I almost locked my lips with her, but with what rationality I have I stopped myself.

If I start kissing now, I won't be able to stop myself!

Before I'm an imperial prince, I am a healthy adolescent male in puberty. I have no confidence that I can control my libido!!

Of course, I won't do that here (I'll get a room if it comes to that!) but I might 'touch' here and there.....

Her brother is here, I can't do that!

I really didn't want Louis to see me like this!!

Because, I think my breathing has become rough. I don't want to show a friend such a sight.

I am a sage. I am a sage! I am a sage!!

I tightly shut my eyes and cast a spell on myself to calm myself down as I stuck my lips to her forehead.

When I finally calmed down and backed away, in front of me Angelica was looking at me with a blissful expression.

Stop! Stop bewitching me!!

Is that a devil? No, begone, foul temptress!?

I held back my trembling fingers and ended it with a gentle smack on her forehead.

For such a hard mental training to be waiting from the morning..... Welcome! I'd like to do it every day!!

As I thought such stuff, I stole a furtive glance to Louis. There, he too was fighting with an invisible something.

I know Angelica and Jessica are not meaning to seduce us. But it's just that we're in puberty.

However, to those eyes, I can't help myself.

When I just reincarnated, I thought, 'as I thought, this girl is my favourite,' and that feeling grew as we continued to meet, and by now I was already deep in it. No, I feel like I'm about to drown in that.

In my previous life, I have some experience with love. So I'm surprised at myself for falling in love from just a feeling of like. But then again, that is why I'm so happy.....

Haahh.....

I want to hug her as much as I want..... my rationality with papier-mâché durability is about to snap.

..... So, Angelica..... Can you stop.....?

As I anguished over my desires, her amethyst eyes stared at me as if they were unsatisfied by just a smack on her forehead. My head is then filled with R-18 thoughts, that it's just too hard control myself anymore. Still..... I'm freaking happy.

"Since we cannot predict what might happen, so never, ever! Approach Brad or Henry, okay? Also, if possible, on that day, please stay in your room and try to not go to classes, even..... promise?"

"Yes..... I understand....."

While being enveloped in brain-melting happiness, I kept warning her like a nagging sister-in-law, to which Angelica consented with a ecstatic expression.

Does she really understand?

I ended up getting worried because of her overly blissful expression. So I took a step back and looked at her with a serious expression. Seeing that change, Angelica too looked at me seriously.

"Promise? Absolutely? If you break our promise, I'm going to punish you..... kay.....?"

I unintentionally spoke in my original way of speaking. Because I spoke a bit rougher than usual, Angelica made a surprised expression for the first time. But she soon slightly blushed again and stared at me with a charming face.

"Yes..... If I ever break our promise, then do punish me....."

Those words with that blissful expression.  
Angelica-san, foul play!!

By the way, it's natural that I'm bending forward now since I'm a healthy man!

.

.

Thanks to that happy event in the morning, I spent the day well.

There's also Louis who was feeling likewise. When we arrived at the dining hall after school, Angelica and Jessica who usually arrive before we do did not arrive yet, but we did not care too much.

They will come soon. Or so I thought such carefree things.

In retrospect, that must have been a flag. But back then I was too excited that I could not sense anything.

However, even if I was too excited, I noticed that there was only Henry and Hughie where Michelle and others usually were, and that they were being restless. Seeing that, an unpleasant feeling ran down my spines. My heart started beating quicker, and sweat erupted all around my body strangely. An alarm was flashing red in my head. Growing more anxious, I looked at Louis, and saw that he too was looking at me with the same expression.

We have to go to them. They must still be in the classroom.....

Then when we stood up,

“You Highness..... I received word from two other butlers that Angelica-sama, Jessica-sama, Michelle-sama and Jackie-sama are locked up in Brad-sama's room.”

Different from the usual voice, a cold, dry voice came from Daniel.

---

Author:

Though I feel queasy, I'm doing my best, thinking, 'there are people who enjoy this stuff!' Once I get over this ordeal, I'm going to write lovey-dovey scenes! Good luck! Myself!!

For those who do not like violating stories, please skip the next few chapters up to Jackie's idle talk.

---

---

Translator:

I read ahead a bit because of that author's comment. I'm going to go over those chapters as quickly as possible, because of some shocking content.

And author, you said there will be more sugar. But noooo.  
Well, et hoc transibit, so I'll get over it quickly.

I

# Idle Talk: Ruinous footsteps invade the body like aphrodisiac (Brad)

## Idle Talk: Ruinous footsteps invade the body like aphrodisiac (Brad)

Author: This time, it’s the bespectacled pervert’s perspective. I’m rating it R. It may be offensive, so steer clear if you don’t like these things.

The story still connects well enough without this chapter, I guess? It shouldn’t be so bad if you skip from here up to Jackie’s idle talk.

---

TL: You have been warned.

---

---

The entrance ceremony this year was somewhat different from the usual. I couldn’t specifically point out what was different. If there was something, the atmosphere in school changed.....?

From the different atmosphere, I felt exhilarated———

- .
- .
- .

My first impression of her was surprise and excitement. Her appearance was very similar to that prostitute who never accepted my offer. The legendary courtesan who never accepted me. To get her by any means, I craftily and carefully laid out traps, like how a spider spins her webs. Then I waited for her to fall into my arms..... that was how it was supposed to be. However, she swiftly avoided my traps and flew out of my reach, as if to mock me. With pregnancy as her excuse, she stopped being a prostitute and ran away to a noble. That noble then sent her away to his villa, stating that he did not want others to see her. Such events transpired, and for me who did not have connections to that noble, I was left without a single lead. Thinking that I would never meet her again, I gave up on the chase.

The prey that I thought would never appear again has reappeared in front of my eyes. The prey designed only for me, her daughter.....

The prey called Michelle captivated men one by one like her. I could not feel the same cleverness from her actions, but she might have been acting. It would not be strange for her daughter to have schemes.

I have to be cautious this time. I am not letting her get away like that time. I have to be even more meticulous in laying the traps this time.....

I mixed in with Michelle's followers and spent my time there. She captivates men effortlessly like a whore in front of my eyes. She is indeed her daughter, what with that talent of toying with men without crossing the line.

The more I stay with her, the more my wild desires pile up. Though I desperately suppress them, those sadistic desires of domination continue to grow.

While I suppressed my growing desires, I ensnared students who had the same eyes as her. Even though they may be noble kids, they are still kids. It is easy to make them fall to pleasure in a blink. Even as I harassed a substitute, my target of violation in my head was her.

To be honest, I was doing the taming to be done on her to a substitute. By I continued such perverted acts, I kept in check my sadistic desires as I imagined delusions of capturing her like a spider.

I could feel myself break down, but that too excited me further like aphrodisiac.....

.

Was it just coincidence that I learned of them? No, it was definitely fate.

The commotion that musclehead Robert caused in the dining hall.

She — — — Angelica was standing face to face with Robert with her eyes hiding a strong will to protect her friend.

Without looking down, she throws cynical remarks at Robert. She was indeed like a noble queen.

In those seemingly incorruptible eyes, I felt a chill.

How will those eyes change when she is dominated by a man whom she does not even like.....?

Just by imagining, heat gathered in my lower body. In this situation that may

even be called chaotic, I felt ridiculous at my own desires, yet I became more excited.

In my moment of excitement, they then appeared valiantly. As if to protect a precious gem, hid 𐄎 𐄎 𐄎 Angelica with his body, he silenced the surroundings with those eyes holding absolute power and resolved the conflict.

I had originally thought of Prince Kyle and Louis as just 'pretty-faced puppets'..... That incorruptible, absolute dignity of a prince. And the lingering sex appeal that had not yet left the domain of a child. And those earnest eyes gazing at their beloved gems, as if to compensate for the lack of passion. All that combined with their attitudes towards their precious people tugged at me. At the same time, a sadistic desire was born.

How will those strong eyes turn when their beloved are violated in front of their eyes..... How will they cry when violated in front of their beloved.....

It was a tempting desire. Every time I saw them, I teased them. When I stared at them without hiding my desires, they turned away in fear. My newfound desires basically meant needing more substitutes, but it was a necessary sacrifice.

While I trained the young lambs, I satisfied my unfulfilled desires with their photos. Still, it was not enough.

This desire will not go away until I violate them in person.

That man started bothering me when I saw that he relied on that man. That man used his position as a butler and became His Highness Kyle's confidant. Though it was a little different from the gaze Kyle sent to Louis, but it was similar nonetheless.

Shouldn't he be making those eyes towards me? So this what it feels like to have one's trust betrayed into despair.....

Why are you making such eyes to that man.....?

Ahh! I wish to taint them with myself.

I want to make them all soft and wet with me, however many times it takes.....

It would be amazing..... Just from imagining..... I end up coming so many times.

Angelica and Michelle. I shall give you a lovely necklace. You will become my cute pets as both mouths are blocked on the bed.

Prince Kyle and Louis will need cuffs, so that they will not rampage about.

To not miss the moment when their cynical remarks turn into imploring pleas, let's not block their mouths.

If they play nice, I might let them touch their beloved.

It was paradise, just from imagining.

.

.

I came across that by chance. Prince Henry from the neighbouring country requested my help in his plan to capture Prince Kyle.

That prince had a sick obsession with Michelle, and harboured hostility towards Prince Kyle. I had no obligation to help, but since I also had something to gain I responded adequately.

As a part of that plan, Jackie was to approach them under the pretence of helping Michelle.

So when the two of them came out of Prince Kyle's room, it was not too surprising.....

But to Jackie's courting, Michelle definitely responded.

I could see desire in that expression..... I was dumbfounded.

Before, I could not see any 'desire' or 'lust' in her. She was just enjoying romance as a game, toying with men without using her body.

However, when she was looking at Jackie, I could see that lovestruck expression.....

..... I will no forgive you.....?

Never!!

.

I don't care about Henry's plan anymore.

Michelle, I shall go forth and capture you right now. And then I'll shatter whatever feelings you have.

I'll make you moan obscenely in front of Jackie.

I wonder, what sort of sound will you make in front of the person you like? I



want to see those pure eyes go blank. At the last moment, will you plead for his help? Or will you scream, 'please don't see me' .....?  
How will you despair, I wonder?

While I basked in happiness in the twilight, I somewhat forcefully ensnared Michelle and Jackie.

However, there was a miscalculation on my part. There were more.  
Very enjoyable extras.....

Four victims are now in my room. As I eye the four of them, I grin. The sight of the four of them trembling at my smile is just so.....

Those eyes are unbearable..... please, get more scared? I will show you despair too.

Now, who should I start from.....?

While imagining the fun time that is about to begin, I make Michelle and Jessica sniff aphrodisiac.

While waiting for the aphrodisiac to take effect, I restrain Jackie and strip him, as well as putting Jessica next to her.

When the aphrodisiac takes effect, they will strip on their own and start clinging to whoever is next to them. Michelle will see her love getting messed up with someone else.

Just how will she despair.....?

Ah, at that thought..... !!!

Anyone can tell that I have an ecstatic expression, hm? This will be the most pleasurable time.....

How should I break Angelica.....?

Right, I should prepare a VIP seat for Angelica. A spot where she can see everything while she is restrained. There she will be shown how her closest friend falls. On that fool's seat, there will be Angelica who tried her best to protect Jessica.

I wonder how the sight of her friend falling in front of her will change her.....  
Finally, Michelle. I will let Jackie see your cute sight.

I will softly crush all four of them.

- .
- .
- .

Now, the orgy begins— — —

---

Author:

Writing this story is the reason for me feeling emaciated.  
I could feel my eyes dying as I typed.....

I'll upload the next chapter as soon as possible.

---

---

Translator:

You sicko, Brad.  
I also could could feel my eyes dying as I typed.

And ditto with uploading the next chapter as soon as possible. (Tomorrow)

# Chapter 28: Even at times like these, boys will be boys.

## Chapter 28: Even at times like these, boys will be boys.

Author:

The idle talk yesterday, I revised it.

I wanted to write more entrancing sentences, but that was the limit. My mental fortitude is just too.....

But this was a bit better.

---

It only took a very short moment of thought. Before I realised it, I was already running.

When I arrived at Brad's office, there was a bleak-faced Louis standing next to me. Because he too was out of breath, I assumed he also came running with me from the cafeteria.

I couldn't even see him.

Anyway, what's more important now is to save Angelica from that pervert!

I was about to enter thoughtlessly, but Daniel placed a hand on my shoulder to stop me.

"I will enter first and neutralise the magic tools inside. Then please enter. Please prioritise the rescuing of your beloved, sirs."

I felt sure seeing the unfazed Daniel.

When we silently nodded, Daniel politely knocked, saying 'excuse me,' and opened the door.

Then an extraordinary cracking sound came from the door.

Ah, it was locked..... I thought it wasn't since Daniel opened it so naturally without using much strength.....

Daniel entered and proceeded. He disabled the magic tools placed in the reception room and quietly opened the doors to the bedroom.

Then the scene inside was laid out in front of our eyes.....

Seeing that, I felt a shudder.

Jackie was naked and restrained on the floor.

Then there was Jessica who was writhing and crying on the floor while undressing herself in confusion.

Michelle was being grabbed by Brad, as she was crying out for help to Jackie. Her uniform was torn apart and her breasts were being fondled.

Then Angelica.....

Her hands and feet were tied up and she was put where she can see everything. Nothing was done to her except being gagged.....

..... Although this was a grave moment, I ended up thinking, 'I'm glad he didn't touch Angelica'. I'm trash.....

Not letting that out, I ran to Angelica's side and untied her quickly. Without saying a words I just hugged her tightly, trying to reveal my terribly distorted face.

Please don't look at me, I'm trash that only thinks of you.....

"...Ah, .....K, yle... sa, ma?"

As I just hugged her tightly without saying a word, Angelica let out a small sound.

Feeling angry at myself for failing to protect her, my grip tightened.

There were many 'ugh' sounds and various violent sounds, but I did not think to check. I left Brad to Daniel. Then I had nothing to worry about.

I wonder how long I was hugging Angelica.....?

The mysterious flow of time might have been 1 hour or 1 minute. Before I knew it, Angelica stopped trembling.

However, I still felt tremors.....

Then I realised that it was me who was trembling.

I must have been clinging onto Angelica, not embracing her.

How pathetic am I.

At times like these, I have to be the one to console her.....

I opened my mouth to speak, but nothing came out. My head went blank seeing her safe.

To not be able to say anything, I couldn't help but laugh bitterly at myself who was good for nothing.

If I'm already a good-for-nothing, wouldn't it be fine to be more pathetic now?

I slackened my arms slightly. Feeling my arms loosen, Angelica looked at me uneasily. To that, I kissed her forehead and stared into her eyes.

“Why did this happen? ..... If anything happens to you, Angelica..... I might kill myself. So, please..... take care of yourself? I’m glad..... really glad..... that you’re safe.....”

I reproached her for my own failings in an unsightly manner. Though I could not say anything to reassure her, I could still say such pathetic things. But she did not show displeasure and gently leaned her forehead against myself and smiled. When I thought that smile approached closer, I felt a soft sensation on my lips.

From the sudden attack, my rationality had already flew out the window when I finally understood that was a kiss. I chased those fleeting lips, and firmly asserted myself over them. Just like that, I invaded her innocent, untainted mouth.

“Mm..... Mmm”

I heard muffled moans, yet I couldn’t care less. To her whose legs gave out, I wolfed down on those cute lips.

The tension all left from that kiss. I couldn’t care less where this is and what situation it was in.

Normally, I held back with my rationality, but now nothing could stop me.

The arms that had been supporting her started slowing caressing downwards.....

“Your Highness, that’s enough.”

I thought there was nothing to stop me..... but there was also Daniel here. Feeling that hand on my shoulder and hearing the cold yet stern voice, I returned to my senses. A part of me felt disappointed, but I released her lips upon which a transparent thread formed between us. With an expression out of focus, she was looking at me ecstatically.

My excitement was fanned even more by that, but to stop myself I held her to my chest so that I would not see her.

To check if others were alright, I turned around.

There, I saw Jessica, who was now wearing Louis’s jacket, hugging and kissing Louis.

Michelle was clinging onto Jackie, who was now dressed up, crying her heart out. And then there was Brad, tied up and moaning ecstatically on the bed, with a blissful expression.

A pervert indeed.

“I have shown him a happy hallucination. I ask that you now contact the Empire’s knights to collect him, sir.”

Daniel answered my gaze with a smile.  
What the heck is ‘a happy hallucination’? Looks like his secret desires were fulfilled in that illusion.....  
As for that desire.....  
Who the heck is the partner!?

As I shuddered in fear, Daniel continued to break the bad news.  
“It appears that Jessica-sama and Michelle-sama were drugged with aphrodisiacs. Thus, I hope Louis-sama and Jackie-sama will consider that while taking care of them. If we make a wrong move, their futures will receive heavy blows, so please do take care.”

Having received the news, Louis and Jackie quickly excused themselves out, carrying Jessica and Michelle in their arms.

I thought, ‘I’m a bit envious,’ at the sight of the them. I truly am perverse.

---

Author:  
The protagonist is a good-for-nothing. And perverse.  
I think it’s fine though.

---

---

Translator:  
There is a part of me that is disappointed that nothing actually happened ~~except for Kyle making love~~, but I’m mostly glad that nothing actually happened.

# Idle Talk: How to calm down her in heat (Jackie's case)

## Idle Talk: How to calm down her in heat (Jackie's case)

Author:

Some forced depictions here, so steer clear if you're weak to these stuff.  
I think you won't feel to uncomfortable if you skip up to this.

---

I was careless.

The cause for today's commotion can be summarised as thus.  
I still do not know what turned his switch on. However, It seems that he knew that Michelle and I understood each other. I can only think that his actions were from his knowledge of that.

This morning, His Highness Kyle and Louis said that they will explain to Angelica and Jessica about the details of the plan, and about how dangerous Brad and Henry are.  
Ultimately, this saved Michelle and me at the cost of putting Angelica and Jessica at risk. I felt sorry for the girls, but this was divine reward.

.

When I was called out by Brad after lunch, I did not feel anything unusual, nor did I hold any doubts. Even when he said, 'Come to my room because I want to check things for the plan three days later,' I went casually thinking, 'I'll collect information.'

Even after I entered the room, he just checked and showed the restraints and soundproofing magic tools that he planned to use. He was checking the condition since it was scheduled to be passed to Henry.  
Brad did not show any particularly weird movements, and it just seemed as if he wanted to boast his collection, so I thought, 'let's get over with this quickly.'

"Later, I'll also use that handmade tool."

As he held that tool out while making a shady smile, I saw images of that pervert Brad and I, but I had already reached out.  
I chagrinned at the image that came a bit too late at a situation where I could

not pull back. Then, as if someone turned the lights out, my consciousness faded.

.

When I came to, I was writhing on his room's floor, tied and gagged. Unable to grasp the situation, I panicked slightly. I then recalled the meeting that afternoon, but I could not fathom how it came to this.

He was supposed to be uninterested in me. Then why did he decide to prey on me?

I thought of many different reasons, but the most likely reason was that he wanted to have that after-school date that I had with Michelle, which is a petty reason.

But that was the best I could think of. I had no idea why else..

I tried to take off the restraints, but I could not take the magic tools off. While I was floundering about madly, I could hear many voices of women. I could recognise one. This voice..... Michelle.....

Why are you here? You know this place is dangerous.....

As I wondered, the room suddenly fell silent. Then, Brad came in, carrying the bodies on unconscious women one by one.

I recognised the three of them. One was of course Michelle. The other two..... Angelica-jou and Jessica-jou.

“Do you know since when these children were friendly with each other? Why did these two follow Michelle here? Strange.....? Anyway, to even get these girls as well, lady luck loves me! Now I can get those two easily as well!”

As he laughs raptly, he continues to tie up the women one by one.

Maybe they tried to help Michelle seeing her going to Brad's.....

I understood the reason, but I wanted to yell, ‘Why the hell did you stick your neck out here? If there's something bad going on, you should have reported to your knights first!!’

His Highness Kyle and Louis were both even moving while considering the girls' safety first. Yet for this to happen..... I feel sorry for them.....

I knew it was futile in this situation, but I my hopes got up just by seeing the girls. However, as I could not move nor speak, I could not do anything. Since



their butlers must have contacted His Highness Kyle, I could only wait for help. While praying for help to come before the girls receive any serious damage, I move my eyes, the only free parts of my body, to collect as much information as possible.

Then, as I looked around, some terrifying tools that I did not even want to know what they were for came into my sight. 'What the hell are you planning to do!' was what I wanted to shout.

From trying to calm myself down, I instead became more restless.

Then, Michelle was made to sniff a bottle that had some strange liquid. Then Jessica-jou too was made to, and there was even a small amount of it in her mouth.

What's that liquid? It can't be aphrodisiac, right.....?  
He didn't use it on Angelica, though.....

In front of my confused eyes that could not keep up with the current situation, things progressed one by one.

When I realised that guy came here, he started tripped me. Maybe because he grew annoyed at not being able to take them off so easily because of the restraints, he started ripping them apart. Then as I lied naked, Jessica-jou was laid down beside me.

Angelica-jou was forced to sit at a place where she could see everything, and then she was tied to the chair and gagged.

Then Michelle was placed where I could see her, and then he started hugging her from behind.

I saw that the girls were awake when he used the magic tools, but Michelle and Jessica-jou's appearance is somehow alarming.....

"Come, let's start the orgy!"

With a blissful expression, he declared so, making a fanfare sound, and ripped Michelle's shirt. A scream rang out. Michelle was being kissed on her neck as she was being groped.

Fear and despair in her eyes, Michelle reached out to me pleading for help.

Brad looked at that delightedly, whispering, "why don't we show your favourite Jackie your cute side?"

Stop! Don't you dare touch Michelle!! Was what I wanted to shout, but I could not even cry out. To be unable to do anything as the girl I like is being violated..... Next to me, Jessica was stripping and writhing in confusion. From that, I concluded that it was indeed aphrodisiac. Isn't it dangerous, the amount that was used on her? If that's the stuff Henry prepared, then won't she become a cripple!? Your Highness Kyle! Louis! Please, quickly!! Before it's too late!

I had only thought everything would be fine by causing Henry's downfall. Then I thought Michelle's safety would be guaranteed. But what's with this!? Brad ignored Henry's wish. He acted on his own. Then he appeared with many dangerous tools. At this rate, he will cripple everyone.

Somebody, please!! Screaming silently, I continued to plead for help, to anyone.

That seemingly everlasting hell suddenly came to an end.

"My, it seems that you have something going on. However, I must announce this party over, you see?"

A voice drifted in the room, and suddenly someone rushed by next to me.

I couldn't follow the turn of events. While I was still panicking, His Highness Kyle's butler was standing next to me. The butler-dono snapped his fingers. Then, Brad's body flew into the wall, drawing a graceful arc. Also, my restraints came off and my clothes were lying next to me. I hurriedly put some clothes on and ran to Michelle's side. From that snap, her restraints came off too and she started scrambling for me. While embracing Michelle, I put my jacket on her. As I checked her, my beloved, everything seemed to have been cleaned up.

"It appears that Jessica-sama and Michelle-sama were drugged with aphrodisiacs. Thus, I hope Louis-sama and Jackie-sama will consider that while taking care of them. If we make a wrong move, their futures will receive heavy

blows, so please do take care.”

Hearing that, I lifted Michelle up in my arms and dashed to my room. When I arrived, a message and medicine arrived. Apparently, the effects will fade away after two hours. The medicine is an antidote for the aphrodisiac, to be applied to reduce the effects and suppress side effects and after effects.

I immediately gave her the medicine mouth-to-mouth, then observed Michelle.

Even after a while, I saw that the strong effects were gone. It was only a matter of time until the effects fully receded. The problem was..... I wasn't sure if I could stay rational that..... long.

But it's for her. I'll do my best.....!

“.....Jackie... Jac..... kie.....”

The oath I just swore was already about to be broken from Michelle's provocative voice.

I'll do my best, as much as possible..... no, a little bit...  
I'll persevere, I think?

---

Author:

The next chapter is also idle talk, from Louis's viewpoint.

# Idle Talk: How to calm down her in heat (Louis's case)

## Idle Talk: How to calm down her in heat (Louis's case)

Author:

Rated R.

Louis's pure love?

Here he takes the role of the orthodox hero in shoujo mangas.

---

The moment I stepped into that room, I froze from the madness within.

It was clear what he was trying to do. The screams of women were reverberating throughout the room.

Seeing that no sound could be heard just next door, a soundproofing magic tool must be in use.....

Somehow, I managed to calmly analyse the situation.

However, that was only for an instant. When I spotted my precious Jessica, my body was already moving.

Without a doubt, she was writhing in confusion at the sensation she felt for the first time. It was painful just seeing her cry while stripping on her own right next to Jackie.

I immediately ran to her side and clothed her again, yet she would shake her head as if she didn't want it and would again try to strip.

Wanting to stop her, I forced my jacket on her and hugged her to stop her movements.

Yet, however hard I embraced her, that only seemed to stimulate her even further, causing her to cry out even more pitifully. Unable to resist hearing such words that she would not normally use..... I unconsciously shut her up with a kiss.

.

Having learned that aphrodisiac was used on Jessica, I immediately took her to my room.

Since, I could not show her in distress to anyone else. No one would want others to see them in such an uncontrollable state.

Of course, she would not wish to show that to me, but the future husbands has the rights to.

I cannot leave her alone either, so I will take full responsibility until the very end. As I entered the room, I received a message from Daniel that quite a large amount of aphrodisiac was used on Jessica. Even if the antidote was applied, the effects would linger all through tomorrow.

The next few days will be tough for both Jessica and me.....

Thinking so, I hastily fed Jessica the antidote. Praying desperately for no aftereffects, I slowly made her drink through my lips.

Once I finished with the antidote, I made Doga open the doors to the bedroom, and carried her away to a place where she would not exposed to others' sights.

Laying her down on the bed, I kissed the crown of her head and told her, "I will be leaving for a bit, okay?" To Jessica who anxiously clung on to my arm, I showed her a smile..

"I will be back soon..... it will be fine. I will not let you go..... okay?"

I whispered in her ear.

Maybe she was slightly relieved at that, since she let go of my arm.

Checking that there was enough water in the kettle, I set up the soundproofing magic tool and went out for the moment.

To Doga who appeared without a sound, I told him to report to Jessica's butler of the events today and of my taking custody of her for tow days. I also ordered him to quickly progress with the engagement talks between us.

In addition, I asked for meals to be ready anytime she wants, and told him to not let anyone in.

.

"H, hot..... h...elp..... .....Loui...s...sa...ma.....!"

When I returned, what awaited me was Jessica crying alluringly. She took off her uniform again, and with eyes that were out of focus she was pleading for help.

Quickly, I ran to the bed and embraced her, lying together on the bed.

Until the effects of the aphrodisiac fades, her current state will not improve.

Then, I will endure this ordeal with her until the end. I did not want to have our first time like this.

For Jessica, I want our first time to be of her own volition.....

Just from my embrace, Jessica felt immense pleasure, crying out many times. Seeing her like that, my thread of reason was almost severed many times. Every time that happened, I bit my lips, and withstood from the pain and the seeping taste of blood.

“Aaahhh! .....N, no..... Louis..... sa... p, lease..... don’t..... hate mee!”  
“It’s okay, I’m with you... .....I still love you, however you are.....”

Wishing that Jessica would have some peace of mind as she wailed from pleasure, I continued to whisper words of love. In this situation, she would not remember a single thing, but maybe some of feelings will get across.....

Jessica then entered a cycle of fainting and gasping when she woke up. Within that cycle, I continued to give her water through mouth-to-mouth, trying to endure this hell that seemed to never end.

However, I have to endure this much trial at least. Because, I have suppressed my feelings, envy and desire, for many years. Jessica had loved Robert. Until Michelle appeared, their relationship was very good. It was not uncommon to see them kiss.

I wonder how many times I wanted to murder Robert?

I thought of causing his downfall so many times, which he was in danger of many times. However, every time that happened, Jessica would cry so much to the point of fainting, so I kept saving him behind the scenes.

It seemed that Jessica thought that I moved as a friend, but Robert was the least of my concerns.

To entrust my precious Jessica to that oblivious musclehead, that pain. To help that person I wanted to murder so many times just for my love, that humiliation. Compared to that pain of blood gushing from my heart, this was merely sweet talk.

Robert lingered in her heart still. However, my presence in her had grown a lot. If I take advantage of this situation, I can dye her in my colour.

However, I want to win her fair and square.

Victory is almost in my hand, no need to get restless now. For now, I must devote my all to nursing her.....

.

Around noon the next day, the effects finally started subsiding. Her sleeping hours, that came in the name of fainting, started getting longer to. During that moment, I gently left her side to have a meal and change the water. I wiped the sweat off her body and changed her into the clothes provided from her room.

From these actions, I ended up imagining my life after marriage, that I made a wily smile.

Jessica was not yet of sound mind, but her crying out for me soothed my heart. Those kisses were just turning me into a stupid man.....

This kind of hell might not be so bad after all.

Thinking such idiotic thoughts, I continued to cherish and care for Jessica. .... That sweet hell lingered until noon the next day, when she fully recovered.

.

.

A few days later, I had a meeting with Kyle after a long time. Having received the report on the betrothal between Jessica and me, he said, "Louis climbed the stairs to adulthood....." making fun of me.

What is this guy saying.....

Wiping off my wry smile, I said,

"Then, Kyle, would you be able to emotionlessly hug Angelica if she was suffering from pleasure?"

I shot a malevolent smile.

If you say 'Yes', I am so going to break it off.

Kyle went wide-eyed in surprise, but soon made a bitter expression.

"Impossible. I cannot, no, I will not. I might vomit from just imagining.....

With a pathetic face, he smiled feebly and said, “What is with that self-mortification..... You are a true sage.....” He bestowed me some incomprehensible guarantee.

My little sister fell in love with a good man.

Satisfied at his answer, I showed him my best smile, but for some reason my friend froze up.

---

Author:

There was no way a musclehead like Robert would stop creating trouble.

---

Translator:

Louis, you’re going to break off *what*?

Sorry, I just trolled, it says engagement in the raw ~~please don’t hit me~~



# Chapter 29: The first katedon in my life was amazing.

## Chapter 29: The first katedon in my life was amazing.

Author:

The serious stuff should be over by this chapter. For those disturbed by violating stuff, you should skip from Brad's idle talk to Jackie's idle talk.

The story should still connect well enough.....

(and then stuff about the author's chapter schedules that I can't be bothered to translate)

---

After the four quickly ran out, there was me, Angelica, Daniel and the climaxed Brad left.

Daniel collected the remaining magic tools and aphrodisiac, and laid a hand on Brad's head. He's probably reading the memories directly from his head.

"Regarding the amount of aphrodisiac used on Michelle-sama, the effects will linger for about two hours. However, regarding the amount used on Jessica-sama, there seems to be quite a lot..... Even if the antidote is applied, the effects will remain all throughout tomorrow..... Worst case, it may persist for few days.....

Daniel, though his beauty never falters, distorted his face in pity, and told us. To that, Angelica, who was staring with vacant eyes, started trembling and crying. At that scene, I felt a pain in my chest.

I could not bear it anymore, so I embraced her strongly and kissed the swirl of her hair.

"It's alright..... Louis is..... your lovely brother is with Jessica, it will be fine, okay?"

I continued to whisper many times.

If it's Louis, no matter what state Jessica is in, he won't abandon her. On the contrary, he will get her with this opportunity.

"Pass the information onto Louis and Jackie, and if there is an antidote deliver that too. Afterwards, why don't we take some actions to progress Louis and

Jessica's betrothal at maximum pace?"

"Understood, sir. I will do so..... Let us conclude the betrothal by tonight."

While consoling Angelica as I pat her waist and the back of her head, I give orders to Daniel.

Whatever the circumstances are, it is a scandal for a daughter of a noble to stay in the room of a man who is not even her fiancé. If I am to protect Jessica's reputation, I have to finish their betrothal today.....

This betrothal was already practically concluded. It was just that Louis said, "I'm waiting until Jessica opens her heart to me," that the talks have not yet definitely concluded.

Thus, it will be over with just a bit of pressure.

Also, there's the circumstances. It was something that House Rowling wished for anyway, and House Fontaine has no reason to oppose a rushed engagement between Louis and Jessica.

Though it may be disappointing for Louis, but since the situation is dire, he can't do as he wishes. Rather, instead of saying that, by the time he comes out of the room, he would probably take the matter into his own hands, proposing for a betrothal and using any method to make the negotiations fall through. He's the kind of man to be assertive at that, so no worries there.

Next, regarding Brad.....

I would like to end it without revealing this incident to the public. Though their chastity may have been protected, it is still a vicious scandal. The reputation of the girls will be damaged. I also have to consider other noble sons and daughters who were affected by that viper's fangs.....

Making it so that the whole incident did not happen..... Even for Brad, if he swears an oath to not say a word on this, it is possible to make it as if nothing happened.

Instead, if Brad is handed over to the knights, the news will spread. I can't even kill him on the spot. Then,

"Daniel..... now....."

Is it possible for you to tamper with his mind and make him a cripple?

The thoughts that I don't want Angelica to hear was seemingly accurately

conveyed to Daniel.

“Understood, sir. As Your Highness wishes.....”

Daniel responded with a beautiful smile and lightly applied force on Brad’s head.

For a while Daniel’s hand shined, then the colour faded from Brad’s eyes who was laughing ecstatically just until now.

No one else would mention this anyhow..... With this, this kidnapping case turned into one only we knew. It has been turned so that the attempted rape virtually didn’t happen.

I will report to the knights about how Brad tried to kidnap the four of them, about how I arbitrarily rescued them, and about how Brad became a cripple due to an accident.

Finally, by leaving the rest to the butlers, we will no longer be involved.

I wonder if Brad will spend the rest of his life in a room with white walls.....

I felt bad for destroying someone’s life like that, but more than that I felt relieved at saving everyone else.

It is an unbearable guilt, but if by doing so I protected Angelica and others, it might be natural that I am feeling vaguely happy.....

As if to deceive my own feelings, I bury my nose in Angelica’s hair and fill my chest with that lovely scent.

While I was taking care of the aftermath, I then realised that I have to check up on Angelica as well.

If you have to ask, I’m going to change the place and finish it today!

I won’t ask after she calmed down, since this case is something that one does not want to be reminded of. In that case, I am going to gouge out a wound, but I will finish it all today and then heal the wounds afterwards, as long as it takes.

“Daniel, I am planning to return to my room now, but then what about this place?”

“There will not be any problems, sir.”

“Then I am going.”

“Understood, sir.”

I carried Angelica under my arms as she clung to my neck. Then, as if nothing

out of the ordinary happened, I started walking nonchalantly to my room. Afterwards, Daniel snapped a finger and then faded into the background as usual.

On my way back to my room, I was seen by some students who subsequently made interested looks, but I ignored all of them. By tomorrow, there would be new rumours and conjectures, but none will arrive at the truth.

.

When I arrived at my room, I gently sat Angelica down and asked Daniel to make some black tea.

I gave her some spacing, leaning lightly against the sideboard and drinking tea. Though there was some distance between me and her, I did not take my eyes off her.

“Angelica, won’t you please tell me? Why were you caught by Brad?”

Just did the four of them get captured by that guy.....

Angelica and Jessica promised so many times to not approach Brad. After the classes were over, we promised meet at designated places.

There weren’t any problems so far. However, this happened today. What irregularity occurred to have caused this?

To my question, Angelica hesitated a lot, but soon she started talking as if she gave up.

It was— —

The first year students’ last class today was ‘etiquette’.

After the class was over, as the two were packing up, Brad approached Michelle. Normally, they would not care, but knowing the current situation, they eavesdropped out of curiosity.

Apparently, Brad had invited Michelle over to his office, and Michelle resolutely declined, saying, “It’s Jackie’s turn (date) today.”

But then, he said, “Jackie’s waiting inside, you know?” half-forcefully dragging Michelle inside. To that, Angelica who has a strong sense of justice could not stand it any longer.

Before they realised it, Jessica too was caught in it. Even when they tried to escape, the magic tools activated, locking the doors. While they were getting

agitated, more strange tools activated, that they lost consciousness. When they woke up, they were in that state.

.....

An awkward silence permeated the room.

I shook my fist in anger. Even as the nails did in, bleeding my palm, my fury did not subside.

I ended up punching the wall.

With a loud bang, the wall screamed. Some of the paintings on the wall fell, and a fist-sized hole opened up on the wall itself.

“Angelica..... over and over again, I told you to not approach him, right?”

After taking deep breaths, I could finally speak calmly.

But, the only thing that was calm was my manner of speaking, my voice being deep and low as if it was echoing from the depths of hell.

With my fist still in the wall and with my head still hanging down, I only lifted my gaze towards Angelica, narrowing my eyes at her. Her shoulders flinched from that.

I got sadistic desires from seeing her like that.

Though I was furious that she did that despite the warnings, but it was inevitable considering her personality.

In that scared look she has from breaking her promise, those purple gem-like eyes were too cute. She was probably worrying about her friend who got into that situation because of her. Seeing that cute face, my anger went away.

Ultimately, I couldn't even get agnry at Angelica. I can't say such 'terrible things' at her, absolutely not.....

However, I wanted her to know that I was very worried, so I coated my face with a wicked grin even more splendidly. Still smiling, I got off the sideboard and slowing went towards her.

Thinking that her trembling was cute, I increasingly shortened the distance.

“Now, it's time for punishment, as promised, right? ..... What sort of punishment..... would you like.....?”

I whispered sweetly into her ear.

---

---

Translator:  
Boom, kabedon!  
I really don't know what to link it to. Here's a picture:



And something else for humour:



# Chapter 30: “Punishment”, that somehow sounds erotic.

## Chapter 30: “Punishment”, that somehow sounds erotic.

Author:

Just being lovey dovey.

---

“.....P, punishment?”

When I crouched in and whispered in her ear, Angelica jolted up with a loud noise. She then put her hand on her ear as if to hide it and squeaked in a panicked voice.

She took some steps back, but there was no fear in her expression. She was just being cute, getting all embarrassed from my actions. Indeed, her head is now filled with the word “Pu·nish·ment”, that no traces of the previous hell could be found now.

She can just forget it now.....  
She should forget that and turn her attention to me. She only has to become a fool for me.

Thinking such thoughts, I throw more words as if in pursuit.

“Yes, punishment..... Naughty children who break promises need to be punished, right? What sort of punishment do you think is best?”

I was enjoying playing this brutal game on her, also called ‘hunting her’. On the other hand, I, who was in the love mode of ‘I want to treasure her so much that she will forget everything’, was trying to gain control. In this contradicting stance, while thinking of the beautiful looks of the two of us that are so very compatible with each other, I was enjoying this situation.

I slowly backed down, slightly leaning on the back of the chair that Angelica was sitting on. I looked at her, while hiding my grin behind my hand.

Really, she’s so cute. What at I going to do with you!

“P, Punish..... ment.....? ..... What... sort.....”

While darting her eyes around the room, she continued to step back. In the end, she was cornered into the wall, and ended up stuck there.

I slowly approached her, and placed my right hand on the wall, right next to her face.

Then, I shortened the distance by placing my elbow on the wall as well, and softly stroked her deep blue hair.

Unable to run away from me, Angelica just stared at her feet as if to escape the gaze at least.

“Yes, punishment... because... we promised, right? That I will punish you if you break our promise. The classic form of punishment would be ‘spanking’ on top of my knees..... But for this special occasion, I will let you choose.”

While taking care to not sound suggestive, I tried to speak in a gentlemanly manner.

However, my head was already full of pink stuff. Well, “punishment” sounds erotic, right!?

It’s alluring for me who’s in full puberty!?

What kind of pervert am I to get excited from my own words?

But! This was promised!

Justice is on my side!!

The orthodox punishment is of course ‘spanking’..... No, on second thought.....

You know, this is a reward!?

In my head, I could see Angelica sobbing and mumbling.

If I get careless, I’ll make an expression like a dirty old man. No, I might already be doing it!

Thus, I plastered on a wicked grin to not let my thoughts show on my face.

Angelica, still blushing bright red, shyly looked at my face..... And then she wore a sad expression.

What happened?

The pink flowery atmosphere suddenly turned tense. I gently moved my hand, stopping the stroking of her hair, to her chin and lifted her head to face mine.



When I stared at her, tears started welling up in Angelica's eyes.

"Yes..... a harsh one, please....."

With a hoarse voice, she voiced her wish.

.

.

.

..... I thought I was going to die!

I just blacked out for a moment!?

..... What's with this nosebleed.....

By a sharp punch from an unexpected angle, I was almost incapacitated. However, Angelica did not stop her assault.

"Because of my mistake, Jessica is suffering, right.....? If it's Kyle-sama, nothing is too painful..... so you can punish me that much.....!"

Saying that while clinging to my chest.....

Gegufu!!

I feel like I'm vomiting blood now..... please spare me!

Saying nothing is too painful or something, that has too much destructive power!!

Still, I know that she said from the bottom of her heart. She really regrets her decisions and wants repent.

She's feeling guilty for being the only one untouched after being captured by Brad.

My cute, poor Angelica..... you don't have to worry about anything? I'll be making sure everything's fine. Jessica too is probably feeling happy now. Your brother is next to her, you see? There's no way that my friend I'm so proud of will abandon her, so.....

Cuddling up to my chest, Angelica started whimpering silently. I gently lifted her up and laid her down on the sofa. Sitting her on my lap, I gently embraced her and continued to kiss her head until her tears stopped. After that sweet moment, Angelica raised her head and gazed at me. Seeing that

too cute figure, I kissed the tip of her nose and wiped her tears away with my lips. By the time they reached her eyelashes her face had melted into a good expression.

When I leaned my forehead against hers and smiled, she too shyly smiled back. Just like that, caught up in the atmosphere, I was about to kiss her on the lips..... At that timing, with a small clack, tea was prepared on the low table in front of the sofa. Next to that, cookies too were prepared.....

The usually silent Daniel made a noise as if to advise me. And next to the tea, some very meaningful cookies were prepared.

That was dangerous.....

If I kissed then, I wouldn't have been able to stop myself.

That's my Daniel! Nice timing & nice assist!!

"Then, Angelica, why don't you serve me as punishment?"

"S, serve.....?"

When I smiled crisply and said that, Angelica tilted her head interestingly. Even that action's cute, what is this child planning on doing to me!? Resisting that torment somehow, I lift up the plate with the cookies.

"Right, serve. First, won't you feed me the cookies?"

I softly close my eyes and open my mouth in wait.

Angelica was flustered for a while, but soon she hesitantly put cookies in my mouth.

Much more delicious than usual! I want to lick those fingers as well!!

While munching on the cookies, I broke out into a grin. Seeing me like that, Angelica made a perplexed expression.

"This is not a harsh punishment at all!"

Pouting, she slightly sulked a complaint. Thinking that seeing Angelica like was cute too, I ended up stealing a kiss.

"Do you really think I will give you such a 'harsh punishment'?"

I stared into her eyes and asked.

If you think I can, that's unexpected!

Even though I’m doting so much, enjoying these sweet moments!!

“I..... don’t think that, but.....”  
“Then, you should serve me properly, right? ..... I want some coffee now. Can you do it mouth-to-mouth?”

Seeing her crestfallen like that, I lobbed a joke at her.  
At that moment, as if I could almost hear a ‘bo~n’ sound, Angelica was dyed deep in red. So cute.....

.  
Afterwards, I spent a lot of time enjoying the ‘serving game’ with her.  
I’ll just say that I was very happy.

---

Author:  
That was from the kabedon.  
It would be nice if I could write ‘I’ll make you fall’ quite well from the last time.

---

---

Translator:  
If this was an adult novel, Daniel would be the most annoying cockblocker.  
On another tangent, I want to message the author for permission, but I’m not sure how I should approach it. I’m not doing this for money, it’s just my hobby. I really hope he or she will say yes.

# Chapter 31: Dear God (Angelica-sama), I repent.

## Chapter 31: Dear God (Angelica-sama), I repent.

Author:

A serious chapter(?)

Since there are some stuff left over, it might get serious from here on.

---

Phew.

Having enjoyed the 'punishment' with Angelica, I need to speak to her about the future.

'Punishment' was an effect shock therapy that removed grief from her face. If I am to bring it up, it should be now.

I lift Angelica off from my lap and place her down next to me on the sofa. When I gazed down at her face, which was still dyed red, she too fixed herself up having noticed the change in the atmosphere.

"Angelica....."

"What is it, Kyle-sama?"

"Regarding this incident..... I decided to speed up the betrothal between Louis and Jessica. It will be done tonight. Also, Jessica won't be coming to classes for some time. During that time, Louis will be nursing Jessica, so there might be weird rumours....."

When I explained this much, she seemed to have understood everything. "Alright. I'll do my utmost to follow up," she responded. She really does have good insight. If I tell her one thing, she gets ten things. That aspect is similar to Louis.

A superb family, indeed.

The commotion this time makes a great material for nobles, whom by nature love gossip.

The retirement of the teacher who had rumours about him. The hurried betrothal between the two who came out of his room. On top of that, those two are staying in the same room for days.

It's practically saying, 'make conjectures please.'

Nobles just love to gossip. By tomorrow, wrong conjectures will spread in rumours as if they were true. And it's hard to suppress gossip that has already spread. Then, the surrounding people have to follow up properly.

Three couples came out of that room.

As the people directly involved, if we continue to act as usual, or even friendlier, we'll be able to avoid vulgar rumours.

Louis is involved as well, so there should be no shocking developments for Jessica. By the time she comes out of that room, she'll have become one happy girl.

If Jessica is happy, there will be less people making false conjectures.

Louis is the person to protect Jessica even if he is forced to change. Even if that is due to formless rumours of bad taste.

Louis has quite the political acumen for his age.

Furthermore, regarding matters on Angelica and Jessica, he effortlessly eliminated sons and daughters of nobles.

Regarding Jessica, there aren't any students who would dare go against Louis in this country.

So, while we are absent from their side, it should be fine if Angelica protects Jessica's reputation.

She has that much power, huh. Come to think of it, there were bad rumours floating around at the time of the incident with Robert. But Angelica had protected Jessica then as well.

If it's for that, she does not hesitate to borrow my authority.

This time, because she feels guilt, she is trying to protect Jessica even harder.....

It's hard for us to defend Jessica in women's society. So we have to ask Angelica to do it, but I'm worried about her.

We'll never know who was the most hurt person in this incident. However, it's sure that Angelica did get hurt as well. Even though I know it, to request such a thing, I wonder if I'm a cruel fiancé.

Yet, I trust her. And I believe that this is the best way to heal her wound.

".....Angelica..... Indeed, the incident this time did stem from your hasty

actions. ....However, that's not it. Ultimately, it was me who made this blown out of proportion. Even if he may have been a base criminal, it was me who destroyed his mind. Even if that may have been the best possible choice, it was me who ended up hurting you.....”

However, as I did not wish to make her feel more conscientious, I chose my words carefully and spoke politely to her.

“This incident, as the person who hesitated until the end, I am most at fault. The most sinful one this time is ‘me’.

I want to lighten her burden. As such, I confess directly to the last person that I wished to tell this to.

Angelica opened her eyes wide at first, but soon she clung onto my chest with her strong will being reflected in her eyes as though she made up her mind.

“If Kyle-sama says so, then that's what I will think as well. ....However, I'm Kyle-sama's fiancée. I too should be held responsible!”

In my embrace, slowly but surely, Angelica declared, “Let me bear this burden with you.....” in a small and faint voice.

I was moved to tears by her love, her declaration that my sin is also hers. With that emotion, I hugged her tightly, to which I heard a ‘kufuun’ sound from her. I can only say that was a satisfied voice.....

Dear God in heaven! Thank you for giving me the best wife in the world!!

Like how I think Angelica as ‘cute’ or ‘lovely’ in any situation, she too just said that she likes me however I am.

I managed to collect my fragile mentality to somehow.

Also, although it's a pity, I have to shake off this sweet mood for my mental health.

Because, at this rate, there will be an R-18 flag in no time!

Having thought that, I hugged her tightly once more and separated myself. Led by that movement, she looks up at me, to which I flash a mischievous smile.

“However, don't do that again, got that? The wolf this time wanted to eat you up slowly, but there are also wolves that like to wolf down, okay?”

(TN: No pun intended.)

I make sure one last time.  
And, I should teach her something important.....

“Also, I’m a wolf too..... if you’re too defenceless, I might eat you up whole?”

I smirked and warned her.  
To my words, Angelica reddened like a boiled squid, and was opening and closing her mouth without a word.

Since that was too cute, I kissed her on the forehead with a flamboyant sound.....

---

Author:

The distance between the two changed after the kidnapping incident.  
As such, Kyle’s behaviour and his way of talking is changing slightly.

This bit feels like an otome game.

---

---

Translator:

.....I just realised that the title did have otome game in it.

After much deliberation, I decided that asking for permission from the author would not be the best choice of action. Although I want to thank the author and let her know, I am too scared to take the risk. Though I feel the pangs of conscience, I would hate it more to not be able to translate this work. So no message.

.....Sorry for being such a spineless translator. I hope you still can enjoy reading these.

[Chapter](#) |

# Idle Talk: My Prince (Angelica)

## Idle Talk: My Prince (Angelica)

Author:

To be frank, it's hard writing from Angelica's perspective.  
Thought it takes a toll on my mental health, it's actually easier to write from Brad's perspective.....

Many things are over.....

---

Translator:

Angelica's corner is back!

---

---

The cause of our crisis was my heedless action.  
I should have gone to Kyle-sama immediately. Kyle-sama even warned me to not approach him so many times.....  
Also, I even ended up dragging in Jessica who was expostulating to me. On top that, it was only Jessica and Michelle-san that suffered. I was also restrained, but that was it.  
It was painful to see my friend being tormented right in front of my eyes. If Kyle-sama and onii-sama did not help us then, I would have lost a precious friend.....

Always appearing when I am in crisis, Kyle-sama really was like a prince in fairytales.  
After having enrolled in this school, the more I spend my time with him, the more my romantic feelings for him grow.

Kyle-sama tries to not use the influence he has. He does not really show his status as a prince.  
Of course, the school fundamentally emphasises that 'status does not matter in school', but truth be told many people behave with status in mind.  
However, Kyle-sama really does not mind status and socialises with anyone candidly. I was also surprised that he was not increasing the number of retainers in school, as was the custom.  
I heard that royals from other countries and high-ranking nobles were increasing



the number of their retainers through special requests.....

“Even if I am the crown prince, I believe it would be negligent of me if I were to be satisfied with the special treatment I receive.”

Some time ago..... when I asked why he did not mind being treated the same as other nobles, this was reply.

Kyle-sama has been strict to himself from a long time ago. He may be a bit stubborn, but that too had the charm fitting his age.

Since the prince himself only has the bare minimum number of retainers, students from our country also bring only the minimum number of retainers. Kyle-sama has an excellent butler, so it is enough even if he takes on official business, but other nobles seem to be struggling.

However, as some low-ranking nobles do not even have butlers, there are non who would admit that they are struggling with work. Saying that would be tantamount to declaring that they are incompetent.

Also, Kyle-sama does not seem to like using his influence to solve problems. I asked onii-sama why Kyle-sama thought so, and the reply was: “Trying to solve everything with authority and influence is an incompetent thought.”

Influence is supposedly to be used at the right times, that failing to do so will turn one into a tyrant. Thus, he goes out to negotiate first, gauging if he needs to use his authority, then determines the timing for it. “School is a simulation for politics we will be doing in the future,” he also added.

Then, on that line of thought, as the future queen, I too must take control of the ladies’ society here in school.

I must learn how to use information in high society to be of help to Kyle-sama.

If Kyle-sama dislikes using his power to solve problems, I will support him in that way!

.

I always thought so.....

Kyle-sama dislikes using his authority.

To support him, I was trying my best.....

Yet I.....

I forced his hand.

In that room, I saw for the time Kyle-sama's 'rage'. I quickly realised that it was directed at me. Yet, there seemed to be some towards me.....  
It was the first time that I thought of his gaze as 'scary'.

Also, the word 'punishment' that came out from his mouth sent jolt through my waist.

As if to accelerate that feeling, a strange sexual charm hung around Kyle-sama, melting me.

However, seeing Kyle-sama smile like onii-sama, I was reminded of Jessica. Just like this, I have been forgetting my friend while enjoying my time with Kyle-sama!!

Indeed, I felt that I needed that 'punishment' .....

I remember being punished by my home tutor when I was little. When I did not do well, I was caned on my palms. On days I received punishment, I could not even eat well because of the pain.

Realising that from seeing me, onii-sama appealed to my parents that that tutor disappeared quickly. So I was only punished twice in reality, but it still remained a painful memory.

However, I believe I need 'punishment' like that time! No, something even harsher!!

.

I pleaded for a 'harsh punishment' .....

So why am I receiving an 'embarrassing punishment' .....

Not only embarrassing, it is joyful.

Sitting on Kyle-sama's lap, feeding him cookie and tea.....

No matter how I see it, this is just a lovers' fun time. If this is punishment, then all the meetings I have with Kyle-sama are punishment.

This is not punishment at all!!

So I said that to Kyle-sama, but he just responded, "Do you really think I will give you such a 'harsh punishment'?"

Indeed, I cannot imagine the kind Kyle-sama giving a 'harsh punishment' .....

Still, this is not punishment at all!

This is just 'pillow talk'!!

If this is 'punishment', I might become a naughty child in want of more

punishment.....

Kyle-sama's punishment was sweet and soft, that is was almost addictive.

.

When that 'punishment' which really was pillow talk ended, Kyle-sama gave me an opportunity to atone.

It was a matter of course that I would follow up on Jessica's matter, but he told me to do it to atone. Also, he put all the blame on himself. Saying that I do not have to feel responsible.

Really, he is too kind.....

If he wishes to place all the blame on himself, I will respect his wish. However, as his future partner, I have the right to share his burden!

I will not let even Kyle-sama take that right away!

From my resolve and declaration, Kyle-sama was visibly happy. Hugged tightly, I unconsciously squeaked.

That voice was unexpected sweet, surprising even myself.....

I felt as if I would get drunk from the sweet atmosphere.

And, "Also, I'm a wolf too..... if you're too defenceless, I might eat you up whole?" , said Kyle-sama while smirking.....

You ruined the mood!

Thus, let's keep it a secret that I felt like saying, "I would not mind being eaten up whole if it is Kyle-sama" .....

---

Author:

Because Angelica likes Kyle so much, there are various filters applied.

## Chapter 32: They say a rumour lasts but 75 days, but aren't three months painfully long to endure?

### Chapter 32: They say a rumour lasts but 75 days, but aren't three months painfully long to endure?

The next day, rumours were circulating around the school as expected.

From that Brad's office, three couples came out. On top of that, the combinations are.....

"The girl everyone's interested in her choice" Michelle and "just another underling" Jackie.

"The girl getting attention from that annulment of engagement" Jessica and "the one who protected her" Louis.

Finally the prince of this country and his fiancée, who are involved in all of these incidents.

All the males carried their respective partners and went into their rooms. From Jackie's room and the prince's room, they came out before dinner, but Louis and Jessica were still holed up in their room.

In addition, it was made known that Louis and Jessica's betrothal was concluded last night. For a betrothed couple to be together day and night in one room.....

The three couples came out of Brad-sensei's room.

"What? If I recall correctly, there were rumours of special classes in his room, correct?"

"Indeed..... it was rumoured that he taught etiquette required for ladies and gentlemen."

"What.....! Then to be holed up in their rooms right after that..... I wonder what he taught?"

"My, there are still people in there? Moreover, to rush their betrothal like that....."

"My, really! .....Even if the betrothed two stay holed up for however much time, even if they marry as students, there will not be any criticism, it seems....."

They do not come out of their room for some time..... and the hurried

betrothal.....

The noble children who love rumours spread it as if it were the truth.

“Hey, did you hear? The current person of note, Brad-sensei, had suddenly retired yesterday due to his health.”

“Huh!? But I heard he was healthy and teaching classes just until yesterday.....?”

“Ah..... furthermore, it seems that no one even saw him leave the school grounds.....”

“That kind of thing..... is that possible?”

“From the rumours, it sounds like the Empire’s secret agency moved.....”

“Huh? The secret agency that is said to be hidden from everyone, yet moves when the existence of the Empire is related?

“Or so it seems.....? Since this time the prince and his fiancée is involved as well.....”

“Huh, yeah.....”

Young noble children are heatedly talking about the rumoured ‘secret agency’ but their speculations will ultimately end up being no different from other children.

..... The biggest topic was..... Who the father is if the three female students become pregnant.....

They jumped to this vulgar conclusion.

The rumours were as expected.

It’s a scandal involving the most famous people in school. It’s no surprise that everyone is talking about it.....

As the nature of rumours stand, the more vulgar they are, the easier they spread and create more rumours.

Even if I tried to erase the rumours now, it would be impossible unless it involved something on the scale of a coup or a war.....

.

“Iya~..... Rumours are spreading faster than I expected.....”

After finishing dinner alone, Jackie smiled sheepishly and approached as he scratched his cheek with his index finger.

“Hello, Jackie. Did you have dinner already?”

Since I expected him to come today or tomorrow, I speak out kindly and offer him a seat.

“I just finished dinner,” replied Jackie, and sat across from me. Daniel was promptly offering tea.

“Then wait a bit more. I want to talk in my room. Can you come with me?”

“Yeah, of course.”

When I told him I was ready to hear his story, he relaxed. He started talking as he smiled gently and sipped tea.

As I had dinner, the two of us had small talk on culture and cuisine of our countries.

Around us, people are listening in, thinking, ‘What are these two famous people talking about now?’ At this rate, there might new rumours tomorrow.....

Also..... we noticed that some weren’t listening in out of pure interest. Henry and Hughie.

They were harbouring hostility not only against towards Jackie, but to me as well.

Wait a moment? Hey, you guys.

I can understand why you harbour hostility to Jackie? There a vague rumour of “Michelle-chan, everyone’s idol”, so yeah.

But why are you being hostile to me who was caught by your ally?

Well, Henry I know, but what’s with Hughie?

Hughie, I didn’t do anything to you?

Come to think of it..... Hughie was following Brad, right.....

..... Could it be..... Hughie.....

No, stop thinking about it.

Because I could not feel anything good, I quickly finished dinner and returned to my room.

.

“So, how was she today?”

After getting a cup of after-meal green tea from Daniel, I offer Jackie some too.

Jackie stared at the drink strangely for a while, but soon sipped a bit and opened his eyes wide. Seeing that reaction, I unconsciously chuckled.

“Er..... Ah! I told Michelle to rest for today and tomorrow. It was going as expected, should I say.....”

Jackie who was being fascinated by the green tea nervously lifted his head to reply. When he looked this way, a bitter smile was on his face.

The envy of Henry and Hughie after hearing the rumours must have been amazing.....

Michelle is resting, and the culprit Brad is no longer at school. The rumours are absurdities and Jackie who knew the details would not open his mouth. I wonder if they're suffering because they can't grasp the relation between Jackie and Michelle.

“How did you explain it to them?”

How did you make it through the day safely?

“It was my date yesterday..... So, when I replied no to Brad who wanted to changed the order, I was locked up..... or so I said. For some reason Michelle along with Angelica-jou and Jessica-jou were dragged there, but His Highness Kyle and others helped. Thus, I just enjoyed my date. Or so I explained to them.”

To my question, Jackie replied with a bitter smile.

There are many parts to retort at, but there weren't any lies. So even if a lie detecting magic tool was used he would have fooled them.

If we were to continue dealing with them like this, we would be able to fool them easily enough without much trouble.

.....However, since that incident, I don't think Michelle can hide her feelings for Jackie anymore.

That's why Jackie is making her rest as well.....

If that happens, the countdown to the 'imprisonment ending' will start.

“The countdown to Henry's rampage will start.”

When I told him flatly, Jackie's face distorted into a tearful expression. Trying to hide that, he hung his head down while holding the tea cup.

“Right..... that.....”

Seemingly in pain, Jackie was stammering while still hanging his head down for a while. But soon, he raised his head and looked at me resolutely, saying, “Is there not a plan? If it’s for her, I can do anything!”

“If it’s for her, I am willing to risk everything. I will abandon it all! Country, family, everything!”

He said something that sounded as if it came straight out of a game, then requested me for help. Jackie’s expression was clearly different from yesterday. His love for Michelle was growing strong.

He probably had some event to ‘deepen his love’ after that.....

Ku! I envy you!!

Well, I had something good too!! Though it was platonic!!!

(TN: Really?)

Anyhow, it might be a good idea to make him owe me and make him into my subordinate. This guy is quite outstanding too. If I have Michelle, he’s not likely to betray us.

Then, I’ll take care of myself as much as I can.

If I recall correctly, the reason Henry imprisoned Michelle in his country was.....

Then we’ll be striking first with that.....

Then is Jackie ready? Tomorrow night, Louis will come out of his room too.

Then we execute the plan tomorrow night.

I decided to test Jackie’s resolve.

---

---

Translator:

The sentences in this chapter are a mess.

The author was apparently sick when she wrote this, so I understand, but as a translator this chapter was a pain.



## Chapter 33: How does one win a rigged gamble?

### Chapter 33: How does one win a rigged gamble?

“Jackie, will you really abandon your country?”

Because I wanted to talk from the bottom of our hearts, I stopped mincing my words.

Sensing the change in the atmosphere, he too straightened his posture and sent a serious gaze this way. I could tell he was thinking, ‘I can’t make a wrong move here.’

“Yes..... If it’s for Michelle.....”

“You will abandon your country just for Michelle?”

“.....Yes..... I’ll risk everything for her.....”

Or so he replies..... doesn’t this sound awfully like a line from the game? “I’ll Risk Everything for You” indeed.

Today, everything Jackie said all felt disharmonious. I do think that Jackie’s feelings toward Michelle is real. However, saying, “If it’s for her.....” It feels like the game is acting in here.

It’s hard to comprehend that he would do that much for Michelle.....

From a young age, Jackie had been moving close to Henry.

The reason he came to study in this country was to protect his younger sister from Henry by separating them. The reason for him following Michelle also seemed like it was to keep an eye on Henry and maybe even sacrifice Michelle to him.....

However, when Michelle’s content changed, he instantly fell in love and instead plotted to overthrow Henry.

Up until now, there was no route to ‘abandon the country’. Why now?

That bothers me a lot.....

If that’s from the game’s correction.....

This guy was not interested in Michelle until recently. The others’ actions seem to have been influenced by the game, but this guy didn’t have that.

Jackie fell in love with Michelle because she changed. The game had nothing to

do with it, it was pure romance.

However, Jackie is definitely acting strange now.

If this is the game influencing him, why did it start now?

That's what bothers me.

Is there any point in the game influencing his actions when he's already become lovers with Michelle?

Furthermore, this world has four different elements mixed up. The original game + additional contents.

Originally, the characters' actions would be set in stone, but now everything's in disarray.

So if the game is influencing them, I won't know how they'll move now.

Many scenarios are probably going off simultaneously, and if the trigger condition is satisfied the events will begin forcibly.

On top of that, neither Michelle nor I know the additional contents scenarios well.

For example, if this current situation is part of the additional contents, I won't be able to notice it. So I can't hastily come to conclusions.

Also, even if we try to avoid the events, the game influences it so that the event is forcibly triggered.

Like Robert's annulment of engagement and the kidnapping yesterday.....

From this incident, I learned that it's not possible to avoid the events. Thus, I need to create many predictions and prepare for the aftermath.

In this situation where I don't even know the triggers, it will be almost impossible to prepare in advance. However, I still should do as much as I can to be able react to them immediately.

And then.....

If it's hard to predict the current scenarios, why don't I think about erasable scenarios?

First, I believe it's safe to assume that Robert's, Douglas's, and Brad's scenario are out of the picture.

Also, by Brad exiting, I want to believe the manwhore scenario is gone. However, it seems I too am a playable character, so I can't completely exclude the possibility.

As for the scariest BL edition.....

For this, the couples apparently appeared through the contribution of the heroine, so once Michelle is quarantined from them, this scenario too should disappear. Yup, I want to erase this one as soon as possible!

Then, the original scenarios left are mine, Henry's, Hughie's and Jackie's. Mine is out of question. There is not enough affection to escalate into a romance event.

Jackie's scenario is in progress. He's even thinking about abandoning his home country, so definitely yeah.

Henry's is definitely the 'imprisonment ending', I think.

Hughie is..... I don't know. Anyhow, I think it's okay either way whether the scenario is in progress or not.

He smells like Henry's small fry. Even if is planning something, I don't think it'll go well.

However, why is it that I get the feeling that the game is influencing Jackie's actions?

How is it related to the future developments?

It's too unpredictable, that doing anything might be a waste at this point.

It's like I'm playing in a rigged game of poker. A hopeless battle.

Still, I'm winning this rigged game so far. Because I too am using 'cheats'.

Against rigged games, there's no other option but cheating. And eye for an eye, a cheat for a cheat.

The cards I have are 'my knowledge from my previous life' and 'Daniel'.

With these two cards, I could come out on top so far.

Then I don't need to change my policy. The problem is whether I can use these properly.

Since 'my knowledge from my previous life' was not used recently, it feels as if I am at a disadvantage. This world is quite different from the game I know, so my knowledge is rendered useless.

It's like I'm trying to win a game without any guides, unable to predict the future. And demonic difficulty at that!!

Also whether Jackie's behaviour is foreshadowing a new development..... that's what I'm most curious about now.

“Daniel.....”

“Yes, sir. I believe that he is under some sort of influence.....”

When I asked Daniel, he confirmed my suspicion. Whether that’s the game or not.....

His will and the game. Those are unbalanced, so the distortion stands out.....

Anyway, if we can’t predict what will happen next we just need to quarantine those people. In this case, four people, Michelle, Jackie, Henry and Hughie. Out of these, I can take care of Michelle and Jackie. I’ll let Hughie be for now and decide later.

Now, how should I send Michelle and Jackie away from this school?

There, I can use Henry’s favourite move, ‘imprisonment’. If the heroine disappears, the game is bound to end, so everything might be solved.

And if I put them in the same cell, they might actually be happy.....

Of course, there needs to be a proper justification for imprisonment, but I can do what Henry did in the game.

“Jackie, I’m planning on restraining you in this country for a bit. Of course Michelle will accompany you.”

“What, is, it?”

To my sudden proposal, he eyes me suspiciously.

Of course he would. There won’t be anyone who would just say “Yes, I understand” so easily. So I have to explain properly?

“You will hide yourself from Henry. If the country is restraining you as a related party to a crime, even if it’s a prince a foreigner can’t intervene. However, this will turn into a war of attrition now. Thus, I will restrain the two of you. The justification is that the two of you are important witnesses to the incident yesterday. Afterwards, you’ll be imprisoned on the suspicion of espionage. Of course, when the situation calms down, I’ll petition for you to come back to school, but I can’t promise when.

Listening to my proposal while resting his head on his fit, Jackie looked pained for a while but soon he returned a resolute expression.

“Indeed I need the resolve to abandon my country..... However, I believe it is a sound plan. Both for Michelle and for my safety as well.”

Jackie looked at someplace cheerfully and then bowed to me, saying, “I’m in your care.”

Now that this is decided, it’s time to act.

“Daniel, please bring Michelle here. Also, contact the emperor.”

“Understood, sir.”

After bringing Michelle here, I’ll describe the situation and for the time being confine her to the castle. Afterwards, I’ll meet up with Louis tomorrow and decide on our next action.

Safety first now. For other matters, later!

I

# Chapter 34: Michelle's transformation did not end yet?

## Chapter 34: Michelle's transformation did not end yet?

Led by Daniel, Michelle looked restless as first, but when she saw Jackie in my room she smiled happily. She ran straight towards him and lunged into his chest. Jackie took her action naturally and embraced her.

Michelle smiled blissfully from getting hugged by Jackie.

That expression was one I never saw before, one that even I, who thinks 'Angelica = life', thought as cute. Even for me who did not have even a shred of love for her, that smile was enough to almost make me fall in love.

Isn't this..... dangerous?

Michelle's pheromone is powering up? I think that 'power to captivate' is growing.....

Could it be that Jackie's strange behaviour was from 'Michelle's power' not from 'the game's influence'?

Then, won't it be dangerous if I bring such a thing to the castle.....  
I can foresee a future where there will be problems around Michelle (affairs usually), casting the castle into chaos? Is the otome game moving to the castle episode!?

Seeing the two of them go off into their world, I just watched them while gaping, unable to say anything.  
I don't even get the usual 'I want to do it too.....' feeling I have. This situation looks dangerous.....

When I glanced at Daniel for his opinion, he made a surprised expression and grinned mischievously at the two of them..... no, at Michelle.  
Really.....

Daniel, what are you enjoying this situation for! This isn't a laughing matter!?  
Just what did you notice??

Realising that I was slightly flaring up, Daniel turned his gaze towards me and

smiled merrily.

“Your Highness. Would it not be best to direct him to prepare for his departure first? I already told the maids to prepare for Michelle-sama, so the luggage will be ready soon.”

He suggested that I make Jackie leave the room.  
I don't know the reason, but Daniel seems to have something in mind. Then there's only one course of action for me.

“Now, Jackie, please go prepare to depart. Meanwhile, I'll explain things to Michelle.”

I gave him the permission.  
As Daniel planned, Jackie obediently left. Now he won't be here for about twenty to thirty minutes.  
And then I saw what Daniel wished to show me.

The overflowing pheromones from Michelle suddenly stopped.  
On a surprising level, too!  
Then there arises one hypothesis. That pheromone, might it not be something that is released when she is sincerely aiming for someone?  
'Girls in love are cute,' is that it? 'A girl is the cutest in front of the person they like,' is that really it!?

That sorta feels like a carnivore going, 'I definitely won't let go', you know!?  
Well, it's Michelle, so even if the content changed, is she still a 'carnivore'?  
Although you were trembling like an impala until recently?  
No, but..... seeing this, she's doing it unconsciously.....

Then, Jackie who is being aimed at is about to be eaten..... Moreover, the form of the pheromone weapon is not a 'rifle', but more a 'shotgun'. If it's a rifle, it only gets its target, nothing else, but..... a shotgun.....  
It also damages the surroundings.

Getting other prey from unconsciously fired bullets.  
Michelle..... frightening girl!!

This is..... it might be better to separate her from Jackie while they live in the castle.....

“Daniel, keep Michelle and Jackie apart in the castle. Also, deal with Michelle with only women.....”

“Understood, sir. Once the place for their confinement is decided on, I will arrange it so that only one high quality butler is assigned to her.”

“.....Alright..... I leave that to you. However, I believe that there will be problems if they spend too much time apart, so also convey that I would like an environment for the two of them be arranged quickly.”

While staring at Michelle’s unsettled backside, we discussed methods to keep the damage at the minimum.....

If we surround her with women and keep men away, there won’t be anyone to be harmed.....

Also, as to not sloppily fan Michelle’s anxiety, I need a room for the two of them. At the confinement location, I should arrange for a small cottage to be prepared for the two of them. I should also assign a butler and two or three maids that are not affected by the pheromone, then that should take care of that.

.

Until Jackie returns, I will explain things to Michelle. At first, she was anxious about using that plan, but since Henry was scary she accepted my proposal. When I told her that she can’t meet Jackie there, I noticed her eyes turning into a strange shade. Instinctively feeling the danger, I take my eyes off Michelle and explain to her about the potential problems that might happen because of her quickly.

When I also explained that there will soon be a place for the two of them to be together, her eyes returned to normal.

She too seemed confused about her own change.

Joyfully watching our exchange, Daniel murmured, “Hm, it seems her charming powers are growing stronger..... this is interesting.”

No, Daniel, it’s not interesting, not at all, I tell you?

.

I contacted the school as soon as possible and sent the two of them to the castle deep in the night, without getting found out by anyone. I told father and mother the ability Michelle had and its potential dangers, and stressed the need



for caution.

I also asked them to arrange their confinement house before any problems arise.

Unless that pheromone is taken care of, we can't let Michelle outside.

What should I do.....

I don't want to get involved too much, but if I am to live in this country, then I must.....

Well....., I've got nothing to lose, should I try consulting a manufacturer if it doesn't work?

(TN: My lacklustre Japanese is unable to translate this sentence. What the hell is ダメもと?) (TN2: Thank you awesomesauce and Solpower for the help! But the sentence still doesn't make sense O\_O)

"Hey, Daniel?"

"Yes, what might it be, sir?"

"If it's Michelle's mother, do you think she might know the method to suppress the pheromone?"

".....Indeed she might. It seems some manner of solution maybe found?"

When I asked, Daniel stared off into the distance and grinned radiantly. It looks like he can see something again.

Just what did he see this time? From that gleeful expression, it feels like something bad, but since there won't be any harm towards me, I'll leave him be.

When I looked at Daniel amazedly, he looked at me with a face that said 'it's too fun I can't help it.'

"Really, being your personal butler is never boring, sir."

With an energetic voice, he exited the room cheerfully to get Michelle's mother's contact.

From that unusually elated atmosphere, I could already tell that the future would be quite chaotic.....

I sighed heavily and downed the little remaining green tea which already went cold.

---

Translator:

Daniel really is the biggest troll, but our protagonist should be thankful that

Daniel is just content with watching the struggle. He really should be glad that butlers don't overstep their bounds.

I

## **Chapter 35: Men who would get the best solution naturally are indeed handsome people, I think.**

**Chapter 35: Men who would get the best solution naturally are indeed handsome people, I think.**

The next day, Louis did not yet come out of his room.

So I spent the usual time with Louis alone, but my job did not change. As usual, I spent the afternoon in the office surrounded in overflowing documents and then enjoyed some tea with Angelica. To assuage her worries of her friend, I tried giving her gifts of flowers, perfume and sweets, but to no avail. In consideration of her as well, I was thinking of visiting Louis now.

I decided to have dinner with Douglas tonight. Though it's still refined and delicious, the amount was somewhat lacking. I realised it has been quite some time since I had dinner with Douglas like this.

"Douglas, it has been some time since we had dinner together."  
"Really now..... two weeks, maybe? It seemed you had quite the hectic schedule, no didn't mind it too much."  
"Is that so? Well, I was rather surprised to see you smile again in such a short period of time."  
"If there is such a splendid woman nearby, of course one would."  
"Indeed."

Chatting with me, Douglas no longer showed signs of breaking down like few weeks ago. His counselling was definitely going well, and I could see him smile naturally now. The atmosphere surrounding him became softer as well, and the danger I felt was disappearing too.

Counselling, it's awesome!! No, wait, April's awesome, right!?  
Douglas said so too, but April really is a good mother..... I mean, lady!  
It won't be long until Douglas revives fully. At this rate, he should make it before we graduate, you see? Now I'll put Douglas in the list of my retainers!!

Feeling happy from getting a load off my shoulders, I could feel my recent depression recede slightly.

My footsteps felt somewhat lighter too. With light footsteps, I returned to my room and got some green tea from Daniel.

While sipping on the green tea, I nibbled away at the baked rice balls. For a slightly unsatisfied stomach, baked rice balls are just good.

The green tea Daniel brings is always perfect, and of course he brings out sweet bean jellies and rice cakes. Recently, he even brought out 'pickled kombu'. I wasn't too surprised, but it brought back memories.

.....Though it bothers me a lot as to how he acquired it.

Anyhow.....

Is Jessica fine, with the effects still taking place.

While eating baked rice balls, I thought about the two who did not yet come out of the room.

Even if it may be a strong aphrodisiac, to be like this even after giving them antidote, I'm worried that it might be really dangerous.

What about aftereffects.....

Also, you won't die from excitement, right, Louis.....?

I know that they're having proper meals, the fact that the effects did not go away even after three days made me worry a lot.

Also, seeing Angelica's complexion get paler everyday, I was starting to worry that she'll faint.

If she doesn't get better by today, I'll visit them. It might be better to get a doctor then.

They would want to hide that aphrodisiac was used, but professionals are needed.

Come to think of it, would Daniel be a professional here? He even prepared the antidote immediately, so he might know quite a bit, wouldn't he?

"Hey, Daniel, what kind of aphrodisiac did Brad use?"

If I'm curious, I should ask.

It's time for "Tell us, Daniel-sensei!". I'll ask what I need, then bam! Solved!

"It's a volatile type where it's usually used by breathing in the gas, but this

time Jessica-sama was fed some of the liquid. Because of that, the effects are lasting much longer. As for the aftereffects..... she had the antidote, so it now depends on how Louis-sama acts.”

Serving me more tea, he replied, “Well, if it’s Louis-sama, I believe that he will react to it properly. There will not be any lasting aftereffects,” while smiling serenely.

What’s a proper reaction? So there are correct answers in choices? One mistake, and the penalty is applied to a loved one instead of oneself, huh. From feeling the game-like specifications here too, I felt unpleasant. And if it were Angelica and me that were in Louis and Jessica’s position, would I have chosen the correct path?

From thinking that, I had chills on my back. The possibility that aftereffects may last because of me was unbearably terrifying. So I ended up asking.

“Hey, Daniel..... if I were in Louis’s shoes, do you think I could have ‘reacted properly’?”

“If it’s Your Highness, you would have been fine. Your Highness and Louis-sama think very similarly when it comes to cherished ones.”

“.....Is that so.....”

To my pathetic question, Daniel smiled kindly and responded to my question. From that I gained more self-confidence. I decided that if Daniel said so, there was no way I would make a wrong choice.

Before and now, I always had the role of an older brother, but if I had one myself this might be how it would feel like..... Knowledgable, dependable and able to do anything. An ideal older brother.

I should also strive to become a dependable older brother!

As I silently vowed to myself, I was informed that Louis came to visit. Indeed, he seemed to have just come out from a long exhausting ordeal.

“Hello, Kyle, it has been a while. Any changes while I was away?”

A while after I received the message, Louis entered with a drained expression. I was curious as to why I did not feel fulfilment from him, but it’s three days there might only be fatigue left.

What's with the weariness coming from his whole body?

I believe it can't be helped that I just had dirty thoughts. Well, I'm still in puberty, you know? My head easily gets filled with pink stuff. So I lobbed a joke at him, but he replied, "Then, Kyle, would you be able to emotionlessly hug Angelica if she was suffering from pleasure?" with slight malice. And I also really respect Louis!

Of course he'd be drenched with fatigue. I guess he managed to hold on until the last minute.

When I said "Impossible" in reply, I was not imagining it either when I thought Louis made a sinister smile like that of a demon lord.

The actions Louis took this time, I really think that he 'reacted properly'. If in that state that happened, the body would no longer be able to last without it. Then would the mind start collapsing. Then, he really couldn't afford to give out.

It would be torture to see a loved one break right in front of one's eyes. I won't be able to last. I'd probably end up harming myself, unable to resist the pain.....

I thought so..... I did have the correct mentality for romance..... Alright, I'm a decent person.

By the way, Brad, Henry, why were you never in the land of perverts?

.

Jessica was sleeping in Louis's room, so he said that he wanted return quickly if there was nothing else.

He wants to propose properly the next time she wakes. So when she wakes, he wants to be next to her.

Hearing my friend boast about his love life with a soft, blissful expression, I could feel something get cut in my mind.

I want to meet Angelica.

## Chapter 36: I'm sick and tired of waiting for problems to occur.

### Chapter 36: I'm sick and tired of waiting for problems to occur.

I explained the phenomenon to Louis and suggested that we talk about future plans tomorrow morning. Since we need to think up countermeasures for Henry.....

We can't really decide on anything with a short talk. It's also meaningless to ask for Louis's opinion when his mind is only on Jessica. Then, it's best to send him back to Jessica quickly for us to spend a meaningful time.

"Then, see you tomorrow in my room. I asked Angelica to take care of Jessica so don't worry about things surrounding Jessica....."

"Yeah, thank you. Jessica should be fine if it's Anju..... though I feel a bit frustrated....."

I am negotiating about the future with the school. I also requested Angelica to follow up, so there is no need to worry about Jessica. When I told that to Louis, he showed mixed feelings.

Well, I can sympathise. Any man would want to protect the girl they like themselves. However, to choose her peace of mind above his pride, Louis is indeed a good man.

"Louis-sama, a gift for you, sir. Please have it with Jessica-sama."

"Huh? Thanks..... what's in it?"

To Louis who was about to return to his room, Daniel gave a small package. Louis interestedly inquired about the contents as well.

Of course he would. I have no idea why Daniel did that. He never did give 'gifts'. I'm also curious.

Seeing Louis and my suspicious gaze, Daniel smiled softly.

"They're just dried fruits. They say fruits are good for restoring energy, and since they are tomatoes in there I believe that it will have some good effects? Furthermore, I thought that it might be better to feed Jessica-sama sweet things....."

I was bewildered by Daniel.

What's with this high level of girly power!?

I never knew that tomatoes were good for restoring energy. And to think of something that Jessica can have easily without getting someone to feed her.....

That's my Daniel!

Louis too sent a bewildered gaze to Daniel. Louis becomes horribly petty when it comes to Jessica, but he too did not feel like rebutting Daniel.

"Th, thank you..... when I return..... I'll have it with her."

Thanking him, he returned. Right afterwards, Doga appeared and thanked Daniel politely before following Louis.

.

.

Now, regarding Henry.

Our original plan was to wipe out both Brad and Henry when they fell for our trap, while we would declare war on the other country, to cause his complete downfall. For now, Henry's country and our empire are on friendly terms.

However, the empire is much bigger and has better military strength.

If someone tried to do something to the heir of such a country, that country could only exclude Henry from royalty and show their good faith toward the empire.

Being merely the fifth prince, the problem child Henry should have got out of the picture. Then we would be able to secure the safety of Michelle, and he would no longer be involved with Jackie's little sister. Or so we planned.....

This time, we appropriated the magic tools and aphrodisiac that Henry supplied to Brad.

We also conveyed that we have taken custody of Jackie as a witness. However, it's still not enough to strip him of his status.

Henry merely delivered the goods. He isn't responsible for how Brad used it. The goods weren't originally used for malevolent purposes anyway.

Also, I ordered Brad's mind to be destroyed, so he can't testify for anything.

Currently, there is no specific evidence that Henry was involved in this case so the best we could get is a stern warning issued to Henry.



Well, still, they look like they're planning to do something to me, so it should be fine.

I feel like 'come on, this is exciting!' now.

For me, by the pervert BL element Brad disappearing, that anxiety I had also disappeared. Even if Henry does something to me, it will just be normal violence, nothing sexual.

Then, shouldn't Angelica be the one who should be careful.....?

Since it's Angelica, it's quite problematic. 'Recovering all the flags' and 'just stepping on mines' and whatnot. I think it's definitely the game's influence that causing this bad turn of events.....

Even if I try to protect her from harm, things will happen. Then, I should think that there will be trouble for her and prepare for the aftermath properly in her case.

Furthermore, the one that worries me the most now is Hughie. This gaze is really disturbing.....

That's not the eye one makes to a prince of his own country.

If my intuition serves me, it feels like he's going to make things complicated.....

For someone who reeks of being a small fry, he's been moving bit by bit, and now it feels like he's going to do something big.

Since this bad feeling did not go away, I decided to break the flag before anything happened.

Really.....

The heroine (Michelle) disappeared, but no rest for me, what kind of shitty game is this.....

.

.

.

The next morning, a happy Louis came for breakfast.

After that last night, he received a positive reply and so he spent a sweet time until lights out. When I heard him boast.....

It was so sweet that I did not need sugar for a year..... I was practically vomiting sugar from my mouth.....

Anyway, I was relieved to hear that there weren't any aftereffects on Jessica. Though I will still make Daniel give her a checkup.

Looking at the happy Louis, I really want to say, 'Congratulations'. Knowing how hard he tried for Jessica, suffering Robert and even bowing his head to me.....

Louis proved that pure love comes to fruition with enough effort. It was like watching a romance drama or movie.

While smirking at my friend's happy expression, I explained to him about Jackie and Michelle, as well as the movements of Henry and Hughie.

It was a sensitive topic to discuss while having breakfast, but well, this is breakfast here.

There are no reports of any problems from the castle yet. There will be weekly reports. The butler and maids are prepared too.

Michelle and Jackie are taken care of just through reports, but Henry and Hughie are different matters.

Louis too also realised the misfortune surrounding Angelica, and was worried about Jessica who was near her.

Concluding that it would be a waste to try predicting the future, we concocted up a dangerous plan ourselves, thinking, 'let's attack first'.

I

## Chapter 37: First love is unforgettable. But that's no excuse for turning into a yandere.

**Chapter 37: First love is unforgettable. But that's no excuse for turning into a yandere.**

Curious, I asked Louis about Hughie. Then Louis, saying 'Ah, ah— ..... well.....' explained that Hughie's first love is Angelica.

Huh? What's that? What's that new information.....

Then, he's being envious at how Angelica and I are being lovey-dovey? Then going to Bitch was also to gain Angelica's attention?

Huh? Are you a primary school kid?

"No, can't be..... he wouldn't go that far."

Hahahahahaha. I laughed dryly back at Louis, but he was staring off into the distance.....

"Yeah, normally that would be the case. His feelings toward Michelle not really those of romantic feelings, but of possessive desires....."

Though he agreed with my words, his behaviour.....

"Come to think of it, I saw him peep on Your Highness's date and grit his teeth. When you had your first date in the courtyard, he was looking at you with amazing eyes, have you not noticed, sir? I was rather worried that he may attempt something out of jealousy. There were actually quite a few close moments.....? Well, the plans were all scrapped in minutes....."

Daniel casually spoke out.

"On top of that, it's not only Angelica-sama that Hughie-sama has an interest in, sir, you see? I believe that he holds feelings for Jessica-sama as well."

As he elegantly brews tea, he drops more bombs!  
Louis too was aghast next to me.

Daniel!? If you've noticed please tell us! Why didn't you!?

“It seemed that your chastity was not in danger, sir, so I did not feel that it was necessary to report.”

He fearlessly admitted that he did not report.

Are you doing this on purpose? ON PURPOSE!?

More like, this game. What’s up with most of the love interests being yanderes! To the scenario writer of this game, are all the men ‘potential criminals’!? Or is it from a maiden’s delusion of ‘tying me down from possessive desires’!? Either way, there are too many sickos! Well, that might make the game easier, but still!!

.....Anyway, then do I have to eliminate Hughie here.....? I want to reduce any unstable factors now, even if by a bit.

However..... Gosh. Even if he is to return home, that would mean that Hughie dropped out of school, which would end his life as a noble.....

Just how is it, destroying the future of someone even though they did not do anything? And the target is someone I knew from a young age like a little brother, you know?

Then how? Should I ask Angelica to mercilessly shake him up?

No, if I do that I’m 100% sure that his yandere power will level up to become even more bothersome.....

Haah. How annoying! Just whatever should I do!?

“Hey, Kyle..... your mildness, I like it, and I do think it’s your strong point, you know? However, if you can’t make a decision when you need to, then that’s just being indecisive. It is a fatal flaw for a prince to have, do you not think so?”

While I hesitated, Louis gave me a painful advice.

Indeed, I’m just running away, not wanting to become the bad guy. I can’t bear the weight of crushing someone’s life with my hands.....

However, if I am to run a country, that is something I must bear. I can’t say “I can’t do it.”

I was about to open my mouth.....

“Then, how about sending Hughie abroad for studying?”

But I was overtaken by Daniel’s smooth voice before I could say a thing.

“The neighbouring forced on us a nuisance, so there shan’t be any problems even if we send him over. Then won’t he not lose face?”

Smiling quietly, he proposes a solution.  
Daniel, indeed. I never thought of that!

When we have tunnel vision, he broadens the horizon for us.

He teaches us the importance of taking a step back to observe things.....

Of course, if we send him over to a neighbouring country, his future as a noble won’t be destroyed. Although it was only in school, he made two mistakes towards me. He will no longer have the chance to get an important spot, but he won’t be causing more trouble either. Very good, very good.

“Daniel, please contact the count immediately and ask them to choose between taking him back in or studying abroad. Or rather, should we contact our neighbour first to make this go as fast as it can?”

“Understood, sir.....”

I immediately gave my response. Daniel smiled at me as if to say ‘good work’ and started to move.

“It is good that you are both cautious about deciding yet quick when it comes to carrying out the plans.”

Louis too smiled in satisfaction.

.

“Ah, by the way, Louis.”

“What is it?”

“It seems Robert is coming back soon..... that, um..... will you be fine?”

Louis and Jessica’s betrothal is already set, so there won’t be any problems even if Robert comes back.

.....On the surface, that is.

I do know that Jessica’s heart is starting to lean towards Louis. However, this is a delicate period. If there is even a bit of Robert left in her heart, there may be trouble.....

Although I did not say it out loud, Louis read my thoughts. He made a displeased expression, but soon returned to a cold expression.

“There will not be any problems. I trust Jessica, and moreover I am not planning to let her go nor am I planning to hand her over, at any cost. If there is something..... that guy, I will take him down myself this time.....”

He declared that with a devilish smile.

N, no problems whatsoever..... yeah.

Anyhow, Robert..... It would be nice if he could read the atmosphere now..... Well, since Marquess Redford said that there won't be any problems even if he returned, I don't think there will be any big problems.....

.

Now for the main topic, Henry.

First, now, he must be planning on taking Michelle and Jackie away from me. However, he's not that stupid to lay his hands on one the highest authorities in this country. Thus, using 'everyone is equal in school, regardless of status' as justification, I can expect that he would attack me.

He might have used Hughie to do something, but Hughie won't be here starting tomorrow. In other words, his hands are tied.

Even though he's the last boss, he never dirtied his own hands like the small fry he is.

Well, his hands won't be fully tied, so I will need some caution. However, I want to end this quickly.

Then, it would be best to have myself as the bait to lure him into a trap. Well, Louis disagrees on this though.

However, whatever we do, we are lacking crucial information.

So I decided to let him observe me today, while trying to provoke him further. I'm thinking that it might be possible to predict his movements from his reactions then.

When I told Louis about my plan, of course he was against me becoming the bait, but he agreed on my activity today.

Since Daniel was just being like the air, I suppose he doesn't think that there will be trouble.

Another point of worry is Angelica's problematic aspect..... When I talked about it, everyone agreed that the future will not change even if I told everything

to her.

Then I decided that I want to tell everything to her and think about it together. I want to act normally to her. Louis too comprehended.

Then, let's do my best again today!

---

Translator:

Kyle, I'm a bit disappointed in you. You rely a little too much on Daniel. I know Daniel's amazing, but... well, you're only human, so it's okay, I guess?

I

## Chapter 38: Idiot couples may be having fun, but it's miserable for others.

### Chapter 38: Idiot couples may be having fun, but it's miserable for others.

"Okay, Angelica? You mustn't approach Henry this time, alright?"

"Jessica, you too? If Angelica approaches Henry, you at least must get out of there and come tell me."

That morning, when we met the two to explain the situation with Henry, instead of explaining it separately we decided to tell it to them together. As we told them off as if they are children, they made guilty expressions.

".....I understand. I swear not to this time."

"Louis-sama..... if that happens, I'll..... run straight to you....."

.....

Angelica's reply was like that of a punished child reflecting on her actions..... But, Jessica, did something happen? Why are you looking at Louis blissfully? When I stole a glance at Louis, he too looked as if he would melt. They were off in their own world. You two.....

Ku! Baka couple!!

Your friend and your little sister is right next to you!

I wonder if they can't see me and Angelica now.....

Well, now's practically honeymoon for them, so maybe it can't be helped..... but that pink atmosphere..... is really making me uncomfortable.....?

Aaahh! I wish all the other riajuus except me will explode!!

While I was busy being jealous, I felt a gaze.

When I turned to the side, I saw Angelica glance at me with expectant eyes.

Will you care for her?

→Yes No

I can almost see that kind of illusion.

If it's for this cute monster, I'll do it immediately?



Anyway..... Angelica wanted to be a baka couple?  
I see..... then, as her fiancé, I have to do my part!

I gently shifted towards her and took her gloved hand, as if I were holding caramel in my fingers. The so-called lover complete set.  
There, I move my fingers and caress the back of her hand.

“I can’t do anything here, so will you forgive me for now?”

I leaned in and whispered, almost touching her ears with my lips. Angelica then blushed and nodded in agreement.

“Then, shall we get going soon.”

I urged everyone to quicken their steps and walked on.  
To my actions that deviated from the original escorting, Louis looked at me as if he wanted to say ‘oh boy’, and Jessica looked somewhat envious.  
And Angelica.....  
Blushing red in embarrassment, she had the face of a ‘satisfied cat’ .....  
I’m glad that you are pleased, ojou-san.

.

After school, we met up at the dining hall like usual.  
Ah, by the way, we do not go to meet them at their classes because our class hours are different. If our class ends late, they have to wait in an empty classroom. Moreover, we don’t know for how long they’ll need to wait. I thought it would be safer to move to a place with many people, so we’re doing that.

In fact, it should be safe unless he attempts a reckless assault..... right?

Having arrived earlier than us, the two of them were elegantly having tea by the usual table.  
Seeing the two of them, Louis and I were about to approach with smiling faces.....

“Long time no see, you two!”

A man approached them and spoke up. ....It’s Robert.....  
That guy, he’s too brave.....  
Even though he was confined to his house from causing that commotion, he

talks to the victims as if nothing happened. I really think he lacks common sense. Well, even if you wanted to apologise, do it where there are less eyes!

Even Angelica and Jessica are in disarray.....  
Getting scolded a little by his parents (though I must wonder if getting disinherited is a 'little' ...) did not improve his brazenness and insensitivity.....

“Jessica, I’m sorry about that time. It was an unforgivable act for a gentleman. Angelica, I’m sorry to you too. But Angelica, if you don’t become a little more graceful, Kyle might get sick of you?”

Laughing, he speaks without reading the mood yet again.

He really is the strongest.  
Idiots are strong..... they don’t have anything to lose. Actually, they might not even know that they’re losing something.

How is Louis now? I think I can feel the temperature dropping.....  
When I glanced at him, expecting a dark smile.....

The demon lord has descended!

Robert, run for your life! Your future is already depressing enough, anymore and you won’t even exist as a noble!

“I’m sorry, could you please not talk to me? If you talk to me, I will become the target of ridicule. This is problematic, even for my fiancé!”

Louis had been distorting his face, scheming something. While I was staring at him aghast, I heard Jessica’s strained voice.

Hearing that, the sinister smile disappeared from his face, and his expression grew softer.

“Jessica.....”

With a soft expression and a sweet voice, he called Jessica and went over to her side. Standing behind her, he held her in his arms and kissed her on her head, as if to show his ownership.

“Sorry for coming late today. Because I was away from you for such a long time, I became lonely..... Were you doing alright?”

“Louis-sama..... I felt lonely too. Also..... I really wanted to see you.....”

“Yes, me too.....”

Jessica fawned to Louis, leaning against him and burying her face in his arms. There, Louis was staring at Jessica with a smile as sweet as honey, as if to say, “she’s too cute I can’t do anything about her”.

Hey, you two?

This isn’t a room? Everyone’s looking!?

To the two that were going off into their own world, Robert stared vacantly. Wait, what’s that supposed to mean?

Could it be that he did not though their betrothal..... no, that’s too oblivious, isn’t it?

Louis too seemed to have felt Robert’s reaction, as he narrowed his eyes at Robert.

However, Louis only did so momentarily and soon returned to his lover, boasting it to everyone.

“You two..... so Jessica’s new fiancé was Louis?”

Robert asked, looking somewhat devastated. Hearing that, Louis turned toward Robert with a sinister smile, acting as if he saw him for the first time.

“Oh, it has been a while, Robert..... Do you business with my fiancée? I would prefer that you do not speak to her even if you do have business.....? What will you do if weird rumours spread because her ex-fiancé spoke to her?”

With a scary but beautiful smile, he bluntly keeps Robert in check, almost as if to say “don’t come any closer!” Also, Louis effectively told Robert, “can you come to me if you have any business with her?” with words that even stupid Robert can understand.

From Robert’s appearance, it was clear that he did not know about their betrothal. I don’t know if he was told but forgot, or if Marquess Redford kept it a secret (it’s probably the latter), but anyway Robert was quite shocked.

“I, is that so..... I’m sorry.....”

Indeed, even Robert was unable to withstand Louis’s malice and turned his back.....

But from that backside I felt as if I saw a large doggie that was scolded by its

owner.

---

Author:

I really wanted to get revenge for Jessica, so.....

---

---

Translator:

Well, if Robert wasn't a noble, he might not have been so obnoxious...

If he was just a high school kid in modern society, I think he might have been the slightly annoying but uplifting and cheerful sort of guy.

I almost feel sorry for him.

# Chapter 39: I know she's a tsundere, but I never saw her be tsun to me.

**Chapter 39: I know she's a tsundere, but I never saw her be tsun to me.**

Author:

A bit of sugar supply.

---

Since it's Robert. I wonder if he thought everything would return to the situation before as if nothing happened?

He failed several times in high society, but Jessica's heart did not waver from that, and thanks to Louis moving in the shadows he never had any big problems. So even though it was an 'annulment' this time, maybe he thought that Jessica would receive him normally, going back to how it was..... It could also be that he is thinking that getting disinherited is also 'temporary' .....

I thought such things as I stared at Robert's dejected backside. Then I noticed particularly hostile gazes. When I turned around, as expected, there was Hughie and Henry.

Yeah. I knew it. And if you are there, say something to Robert as his fellow Michelle worshippers..... Especially Hughie. You're childhood friends. Come on.....

Since Hughie is simple, he must have been yearning for Robert, who does not nag, as a big brother. Some time ago, we were very friendly, with the four of us practicing swordsmanship together. Of course we didn't win against the musclehead Robert, and even though he lost, he would arrogantly say, "then I'll just have to be protected by Robert-nii-sama!" full of affection for Robert..... What's with that look, looking at Robert as if he's a piece of trash? Indeed an amazing change in attitude.

Well, for Hughie, I have a final harassment (gift) for him. So it doesn't really matter what kind of attitude he has towards either us or Robert.

Since I wanted to surprise Hughie really badly, I approached the girls' table rather excitedly. There I saw Angelica looking at her brother and her friend a little jealously.

Angelica is really, really cute.

I noticed recently that she's the type that likes to be pampered. She cautiously clings on to me or buries her head in my chest, wanting to be pampered. Rather than the teasing kisses on the ears and shoulders, she prefers cherishing kisses on her hair or her forehead, melting from that. I think that kind of honesty is really cute. I want to boast to everyone.

Then, shall I go all out here.

I smiled refreshingly and approached Angelica.

Like how Louis did with Jessica, I hugged Angelica from behind and kissed her on the head.

"Angelica, you don't have to make such a face. I will do what you want, okay?"  
"I, it is not like I was jealous.....! P, please let go of me, people are looking....."

I whispered quietly enough that only she could hear. To that, she blushed and said a tsundere line in an unusually loud and flustered voice.

Though she says "let go", she too clung on to my arm and leaned against me as if to give herself to me.

I can't help myself, Angelica is too cute, appealing to not let go with her whole body.

Like this, she has never been tsun (cold) to me and is always dere (lovey dovey) to me. However, to others, she is always tsun (cold).

Indeed, everyone in the dining hall looked surprised at this side of Angelica. Of course, Hughie was one of them.

"Hey, mind feeding me cookies like last time?"

Still hugging her from behind, I rested my head on her shoulder and pleaded.

"E.....? H, here.....?"

Even though she says that embarrassedly, she puts a cookie in my mouth. I too reached out for a cookie and gave her one, saying, "Then, here's my thanks. Say ahh."

While I was at it, I wiped her cute lips with my fingers.

“How is it? Tastier than when you eat it alone, right?”

When I said so, Angelica just nodded without saying a word.

I released my embrace and sat down next to her.

I then stretched out one arm to her face, tracing her lips with my thumb as I caressed her cheek.

Now Angelica has fully melted. She probably doesn't understand where she is by now.

Aaaahhhh~! I want to hug her right now!!

I want to put her on my lap and bury my face in her fragrant hair!!

After I suppressed my wild desires somehow, I glanced at Hughie.

As I thought, he has a really scary look on his face now. If looks can kill, I would have died already.

Henry too made a look that seemed to say “Why only you!”

Men's jealousy is amazing.....

I wonder what will happen if I provoke them more? Maybe they'll start shooting beams from their eyes?

Well, if I'm interested, I can't help but experiment.

“I really have to thank Jackie and Michelle. Thanks to them, we grew a lot closer..... I wonder if they're doing well, too?”

I said to Louis, raising my voice just enough so that they could hear. Of course, my hand did not change its position from Angelica's face.

Louis too sat down right next to Jessica. He held her hand with one hand while enjoying black tea with the other hand.

Louis turned towards me and replied,

“Indeed. They should be preparing to live together, are they not? Then I suppose they are being more intimate than us.”

With a devilish grin.

At that moment, Henry rose from his chair with a loud noise and started stomping his way over here.

“So it was you!? You..... you coward!”

Henry shouted emotionally and continued to approach me to hit me.

“I cannot let you get any closer to His Highness.”

But before he got to me, he was stopped by Daniel. Although Daniel was not touching Henry in any way, but he looked as if he was paralysed.

“My prince has caused you much trouble. Please excuse him.....”

Henry’s butler, whose presence could not be felt until now, appeared to retrieve his owner.

Although I’ve seen him a few times, he really doesn’t feel like ‘Henry’s butler’ .....

If it’s Daniel, he would stop me before I took such actions. The same applies to Doga, Louis’s butler.

I don’t know if it’s because he lacks skills as a butler, or because he was forced to be Henry’s butler.....

Either way, isn’t that a problematic mindset to have for a royal butler to have?

While I was thinking that, Daniel said to Henry’s butler,

“As a butler, please remember to advise your master from taking radical actions.”

Chastising him with a strict tone and a frosty look.

|



# Chapter 40: It's useless to say anything to idiots who don't realise their stupidity!

## Chapter 40: It's useless to say anything to idiots who don't realise their stupidity!

I never thought Daniel would chastise another butler like that. Moreover, since we provoked him this time, Henry's actions were as expected. After I looked at Henry who was being taken away, I looked up at Daniel in curiosity.

Why did he stop it?

In my opinion, I thought it would be better to jeopardise Henry's standing when many people are looking.....

More people = more witnesses. So, I thought he would not be able to back out. Having read my expression, Daniel smiled bitterly.

"If you cause a commotion with that method, sir, there may be unwarranted damage."

"Think of the consequences," I was told. Of course, he lowered his voice so that only I could hear.

That look as if he's looking at a troublemaker kid! I'm hurt!  
Can I get compensation!? Someone call a lawyer!  
Stop already, stop looking at me like that!

But, on second thought.....

Indeed, I seemed to have created unnecessary effects here and there. If I did get assaulted by him, there will first be consequences for those around me.

Henry might get deported back to his own country, but he won't be stripped of his status as a member of the royalty. His political standing will be weakened, causing changes in his future, but he will still be treated as a 'royal'.

Well, if he gets out of this country, it doesn't matter to me. However, there is the possibility that Louis and Angelica will be censured, that

‘they could not protect me from accidents’. If they’re around me, others see them as being capable of protecting me in unexpected situations. But if they could not react momentarily, they are seen as being ‘incompetent’. I want to avoid tarnishing their reputation like that.

There will also be consequences for Daniel, who acts as my bodyguard as well as my butler. Butlers accompany their masters to aid in their masters’ daily lives, but also act as bodyguards.

Although they dare not go against fate, they must protect their masters from accidents and violence. Thus, when they do not intervene, people acknowledge the disaster as ‘inevitable’.

Well, thinking up to here, it only sounds like a normal assault case..... I’m a bit naive.....

Still, there’s no reason to stare at me like that Daniel! Next time, I’m really going to demand compensation, you know!? I’m a sensitive teenager! I might rebel from this, okay!?

I tried to appeal to him that I felt hurt, but Daniel just shrugged it off. What a butler! He’s a little..... I mean, quite superb, so is he getting ahead of himself!? If you’re going to be like that, I have something too! I’ll report this to the higher ups.....

“Your Highness..... I know that you wish to escape reality, but I believe you should start acting seriously now.....”

I was scolded.....

I think I’m being hasty because I want to end this quickly. But because I want to end this quickly, I have to be more cautious. From today’s provocation, Henry is bound to try something today..... I’ll end this then, for good. But, the questions is, what is he planning.....? Because of Brad’s incident, I don’t think his country will readily provide him with magic tools and drugs anymore..... But I can’t rule that possibility out.....

“Kyle-sama, are you alright.....?”

Seeing me clam up, Angelica stood up and asked in worry, while touching my cheeks with her hands.

Noticing her amethyst eyes tremble in anxiety, I put my worry aside for after dinner. It's not something so urgent to have Angelica make an expression like that.

I wanted to hug her right there, but there were too many people around and Henry, whom I wanted to provoke, was already taken away.

It should be better to change places for fooling around.

Then, I shall propose to change the location.

"I'm fine, but why don't we move to my office now? Frankly, I want to return to my room, but I still have work left..... Louis, mind helping?"

"OK. Then shall we get going?"

I stood up, while placing my hand on Angelica's waist, and invited Louis. Louis too stood up and walked with Jessica by his side, his hand on her waist.

The four of us started moving in a friendly manner, but Hughie was still glaring at us from the entrance.

Isn't he getting too full of himself?

One more case closed?

Well, I can leave him alone since he'll be taken away tonight. However, I have to let him know his position to prevent him from behaving the same way in other places.

"Hughie, think of your relationship with me and your position in it, okay? Even if you are my childhood friend, I cannot allow it any longer after we graduate from school, you see?"

I placed my elbow on his shoulder and whispered in a low tone. Since I never acted like this to Hughie, he seemed quite surprised.

More like, what is his butler doing? He's not appearing even now. No candid advice from the butler? There's no way a noble of his calibre doesn't have a butler, so what's going on?

On top of that, what's up with his education..... Of course I know that Countess Woodlloyd is soft on her children, but that's no excuse for this, is it?

{TN: I hate trying to translate names. Random foreign sounding names galore.....}

Could it be that Hughie does not understand that I am the next ruler?  
I think he might be seeing me just as 'a tolerant childhood friend', this little.....

"I have no plans to have someone that is thinking of harming me by my side.  
Nor do I have any plans to appoint you to an important office should you  
continue your hostility. With that in mind, I urge you to reconsider your current  
standing. If you do not like it, consider leaving the country."  
"....."

With my final bit of compassion, I advised him, but Hughie just silently glared  
at me with an chagrined expression.  
It was no use after all.....

Giving up on Hughie, we hurriedly headed to the office.

.

While breezing through work, I thought of ways to fool around with Angelica.  
I want to seat her on my lap and do various things, but to do that where Louis  
is..... well, you know?  
Forming any cracks in our relationship now is not a good idea.  
Then should we quietly enjoy tea and disperse?  
I don't want that!  
Should I put a screen up and split the room in two.....

When I looked at Louis, he too was looking at me.  
From each other's expressions, we read the same thing.

""Pfft!""

The two of us burst into a giggle.  
Really..... Our heads are full of pink-shaded thoughts. Oh puberty!  
In this situation where we were quite restricted in our actions, apparently most  
of our thought went to how we should enjoy this time fully with our respective  
lovers.  
Really, I want to take care of the problem (Henry) quickly and date freely.  
The reason I am so impatient to end this is because of safety concern. However,  
the biggest reason might be that I just want to 'be lovey dovey without worry'.

Well, since we were able to enjoy our dates after we finished work, so all's well

that ends well?

---

---

Translator:

Why is it that I get busier on the weekends..... Good grief. Next week's going to be slightly hectic so expect at most one update a day. Sorry about that folks.

|

# Chapter 41: Huh? Meeeeeeeeeeee!?

## Chapter 41: Huh? Meeeeeeeeeeee!?

The next morning, Hughie was no longer in school.

The Count's House too was troubled about the hostility Hughie held towards me. They immediately accepted my proposal and took Hughie away last night.

For Hughie to be in the group opposing the prince, Count Woodlloyd must have felt jeopardised.

Originally, the count would have to take drastic measures to erase Hughie from the family tree and have him be separated from high society. However, I came and gave him the choice of reeducation.

As the count and countess dearly cherished Hughie, they accepted the opportunity without hesitation. It's also part of the plan to separate Hughie from his parents too.

I won't be able to see him for some time, but maybe he might reflect on his behaviour or on his standing?

It would be nice if he changes for the better in a new environment.....

.

When I went to the dining hall, Henry approached me.

Every step exuded elegance and was relaxed, but his expression was grim.

Scary.

Being all so worked up in the morning, in a way he's quite energetic.

Was this place Amity Island?

I think I can hear the soundtracks from disaster films. He won't bite suddenly, will he?

"Hey, Kyle-dono. You are a despicable man."

After he approached with force rivalling disaster films, Henry said something out of the blue.

He really smells like a small fry.

What is it. Just what does he want?

Unable to read his intentions, I tilted my head while staring at him.  
Should I say something? I don't think I can afford to ignore him.....  
Then, should I greet him at least?

“Hey, good morning Henry. You are difficult as always this morning.”

To appear that I am composed, I make sure to smile properly. Topping on some jabbing sarcasm, I also remember to respond, “Have you finished breakfast already? Then, shall I ask for tea?”

Well, I have already predicted that he will definitely get angry, so.....

“Then, I shall dine. Since this a golden opportunity to learn of your despicable methods!”

Saying so, he plopped down across the table.  
When he sat down, Daniel served tea to him.  
.....For some reason, aren't Henry's ears red? Is it just me?

Huh?  
What is this situation.  
When I glanced at Daniel, he was grinning gleefully.....

I have a bad feeling.  
Huh? You're kidding, right!?  
I'm overthinking things. Yeah, that's it.

“Hey, Kyle. This is an unusual combination. May I also join you for breakfast?”  
My messiah appeared!  
For a demon lord, being also a messiah, you're quite the busybody!!

“By all means! Daniel, prepare some tea.”

Hiding my inner unrest, I invited Louis to breakfast with an elegant smile. Louis took his seat next to me as he eyed Henry suspiciously. With Henry's outburst yesterday in mind, Louis sat down on Henry's dominant hand side. Flawless guy.  
As Louis took his seat, Daniel simultaneously served tea while Doga served his breakfast meal.

Thankful to Louis for his kindness, I smiled in gratitude.

Louis too shrugged lightly as if to say “I know.”

As childhood friends, we could get our thoughts across without having to say everything.

So when I’m around others, I usually try not to. Well, they’ll feel excluded if we communicate silently, right?

When I thought, ‘I did it again!’ and slowly turned toward Henry, he had a murderous glare directed at Louis.

.....

So it’s certain.....

I’m the target. Louis too looks at me in pity.

Stop! Don’t pity me!!

If you really feel sorry for me, substitute me!!

I removed both Brad and Michelle from the picture, why’s the BL route activating!!

Is it that? Is he coming my way because he lost Michelle as a target!?

Or was ‘Michelle hides herself from Henry’ a flag for turning Henry and me into a couple in the BL route scenario?

Really, what’s the trigger?

You hated me so much!?

You were about to assault me, just yesterday!?

I really can’t understand Henry’s actions.....

.

Today’s breakfast did not taste of anything. I managed to swallow it down and practically ran away.

.....That day, none of lectures really got into my head.

After school, we went to the dining hall as usual, but Angelica had not arrived yet.

We took at seat to wait for them, then I saw a disturbing silhouette.

He was sitting on a three-man sofa, but his appearance.....

He was resting one arm on the backrest while loosening his collar with the other hand, as he crossed his legs.....

I know that.....



I saw that quite a few times while surfing the internet in my previous life. The clothing's different, but that's!

I can almost hear things too.

(TN: Search up 'yaranaika', not putting up any links here.)

Not that! That really won't do!!

I'll pretend I didn't see it. As soon as Angelica comes, I'll leave and enjoy the date!

Let's go to the garden with the roses!!

There's superstition that the place is good for couples!!

I'll enjoy some tea with the four of us, and then break up into pairs to enjoy ourselves!!!

I, I'm looking forward to it!!

I'll only think of the date!

Don't think of anything that's bad for the heart, myself!!

Think of Angelica's cute appearance and actions! Remember the expression she made when she waited for the kiss!

What should I do when that happens again. That should be my primary concern now!!

.

I was so panicked that I spilt my tea three times before Angelica and Jessica appeared.

"Your Highness, calm down. You may fan the flames if you act so frightened, you see?"

I was scolded by Daniel.....

Still, I'm super scared of being targeted by a homo..... (shudder)

---

---

Translator:

Alright, I'm off to read some non-adult BL. I don't mind homosexual romance too much as long as explicit descriptions aren't overused. Novels can be good even with (supposedly) bad context, like novels can be bad even with good

context.

|

# Idle Talk: I love you enough to want (to) capture.

## Idle Talk: I love you enough to want (to) capture.

I am Henry. The fifth prince of my country.  
As I am to handle diplomacy in the future, I came to this country to study.  
At first, I just thought of the school and this country as 'boring'.

However, it all changed when I met the new student, Michelle. She was kind, and was always positive even when facing hardships.

I became interested in her.  
It did not take long for my feelings to turn into love.  
She was very popular, that there were around six of us that were close by her.  
Who will be the ultimate victor. While we kept each other in check, we still enjoyed our time together, with an hour of dating with her.  
It was fun spending time as a group, but when there were only two it felt a lot more amazing.

I had such pleasurable times with Michelle. I would chance upon her, then we would end up kissing or I would sometimes be lucky enough to bury my face in her chest.  
It seemed that it also happened to the other followers, not just me.  
I felt as though we got closer every date, that I would take a bad path if it was for her.

.

I first realised the change in my emotions when Robert's fiancée caused a commotion in the dining hall.  
There, the prince of this country solved the incident. He took Robert over to another room. He probably was trying to say something in secret.  
And there, Michelle blocked his way to protect Robert.  
I was touched by her action. At the same time, I got angry that she was not protecting me. Looking at her trembling legs, I also found a desire to protect her.  
Also..... I started despising the prince of this country who made such cold eyes.  
I won't forgive him.....

How dare he make my Michelle.....!

Michelle, I love you so much, yet your eyes reflect so many different silhouettes. It's tainted by many things.  
I cannot forgive it.

Why?  
How can I make her mine and mine only?

With each passing day, my possessive desires grew. I did not want to tarnish her with people's gazes. However, I could not discuss this with the followers. All of us were not used to being 'Michelle's special one'. That was the saving grace.

If I thought of her as 'our Michelle', I could somehow suppress my urges.

The being I had to take care of. That was Prince Kyle.  
Michelle, she seemed very interested in him, far more than she is in us. Yet, his attitude toward her was scathing, fanning my rage.  
Although he does not seem interested in Michelle for now, who knows when he might turn.  
He needed to be eliminated.

Thus, I asked Brad for cooperation.  
Brad, like Hughie, was a capricious man, and had illicit relations with many students. As he had Michelle, he pretends to not have noticed it, but he looked like he was interested in Prince Kyle.  
Then, I just need to hand him over to Brad and let them engage in perverted activities. Once they know the taste of men, they won't approach Michelle anymore.

I carefully constructed the plan and all that was left was to execute it!..... or so it should have been. but because Brad went on a rampage the plan crumbled. Furthermoe, it looks like Jackie and Michelle became closer after that incident!!

She was everyone's..... is she Jackie's now?  
.....Betrayal?  
No, she's mine!  
How will I recover her.....?  
.....Yes, I'll lock her up..... Even if she's from another country, a mere viscount

has no power to oppose me.

I'll lock her up in a cell connected to my room.

If I am with her every day, all she'll be able to think about will be me.

Should I make her unable to live without me.

I did not think the perverted stories I heard from Brad would help now.

Delightful delusions.

I make preparations to make that a reality.

However, before I could even start preparing, Michelle and Jackie disappeared.

The perpetrator is Prince Kyle.

You again!!

You took away my beloved Michelle and yet you have gall to play with your fiancée..... in front of my eyes!! And what do you mean you locked them up together!

I cannot forgive you!!

When I approached, I was stopped by his butler.

From Prince Kyle's gaze toward his butler, I could see relief and trust in it.

He was always protecting something. With a fierce gaze kept his surroundings in check and protected his fiancée, his friends behind his back.

Yet, you show that look to your butler!?

Unforgivable.

(What is?)

Unforgivable!

(What?)

Inexcusable!!

(Who?)

Something burst within me.

It was probably already hidden within me, slowly taking room.

And now, it had blossomed.....

.

The next morning, I was already by Prince Kyle's side when I found him.

The fake smile and his annoyed sound felt lovely.

How despicable. He keeps disturbing my mind!!  
(More, I want more...)  
Spitting out insincere pleasantries!!  
(The time we spend together is delightful.....)  
I'm supposed to be with him, but how dare he let his retainer sit on the same  
table without my permission!!!  
(Our time together was interrupted! Unforgivable.....)  
I'm here too, how dare they communicate with their eyes!!!!  
(Don't take your eyes off me! Inexcusable.....)  
“(I'll make you look at me and only me!)”

.

Now then, how should I capture him.....?

---

---

Translator:  
I surprisingly have quite some time on my hands! Lovely. It's not all work this  
week as I feared.

## Chapter 42: When a yandere becomes a tsundere, the dere disappears.

### Chapter 42: When a yandere becomes a tsundere, the dere disappears.

As soon as we rendezvoused with the girls, we ran far away from the pervert (Henry).

We enjoyed tea in an English garden and had our dates where we can see each other.

We held our hands through the rose arch and headed to the pavilion. I think I felt a spectre (Henry) stare this way but it has to be my imagination!! When I found him, I ended up saying “Hii!” and clung on to Angelica. Am I a girl or what!!

I’m not going to follow willy-nilly just by the voice so it’s fine! So I don’t need to be scared!!

.....However, to get courage, I want to replenish on Angelica...

Having noticed my strange behaviour, Angelica patted my back. After gently patting my back, she put a little distance between us by putting her hand on my chest.

“What is wrong, Kyle-sama?”

Still having her hand on my chest, she asks softly. I could clearly see her being worried about my strange state.

“Yeah..... there have been many things recently... so I’m a bit tired. So, I wanted to replenish Angelicanium a bit.....”

More.....

When I whispered softly while hugging her, I could tell that she relaxed. Then, I petted her head wanting to spoil er. A while later, Angelica pushed me away once more, looked at me then closed her eyes. Although she did not say it out loud, I understood what she wanted. There was no reason to refuse either, so I gently kissed her. Keeping the momentum, I

continued to peck her cheek and nose, then finally her forehead before I embraced her again.

I bent slightly and rested my head on her shoulders.

“I’m pathetic……. I’m sorry, Angelica.”

I whispered, softly enough that only she could hear.

Angelica bent back a little and caressed my cheek with her hand.

“You’re such a baby, somehow lovely……. I still like you.”

Smiling shyly, she said that.

So cute!

I love you much much more!!

Cute and lovely Angelica. I LO~VE you———!

After replenishing Angelicanium, I turned to take a peek at the spectre……, and.

Ah, our gazes met…….

Huh, what? Why’re you coming this way!?

“Kyle-dono, to fool around in such a place……. not only are you despicable, but also shameless!”

I was suddenly slandered.

What, shameless…….

Come to think of it, there was a manga by that title a long time ago…….

Just a while ago, I wonder if we were full of eros like that?

Henry’s emotion is full of mysteries…….

“A despicable prince and a obscene woman, you make a great couple!”

Maybe because he was restless from my unflinching expression, he started attacking Angelica this time.

What is he saying, this guy!

What do you mean, obscene, to such a pure and innocent woman!

I can’t have Angelica be hurt from his rude words. When I turned my head towards her in panic she did not look hurt. Rather, she looked surprised at Henry’s sudden interruption.



For now, let's embrace her and hide her from his sight.....

.....Anyway, Henry's word choice sounds somewhat hackneyed. And his objective is certain.

What should I do?

For now, I'll complain. While I'm at it, I'll jab him with a stinging sarcasm!

"This great couple is enjoying a date to the fullest..... Our neighbours have such tasteless habits to be interrupting, do they not?"

"Hmph! You dare mock my country!? .....If you were not a prince, I would have you be punished for lèse majesté!"

It's no good. He won't listen.....

And who's being the disrespectful one here.....

When I was thinking of ignoring him, Louis came over, having heard the commotion.

To Louis who looked worried, I nodded my head a little and said, "It's fine."

"Kyle, shall we return?"

"Indeed. Let us go someplace where there are not many people around."

To Louis's saving remark, I responded while mixing in slight provocation.

The shameless I will go somewhere without many people and will do shameless things with my fiancée—

And whatnot.

Sure enough, Henry was looking at me with some amazing-looking eyes. I wonder if he's scheming my imprisonment.....

I, I'm not s, scared!

Without saying a word to Henry, we headed to the female dormitory.

The four of us enjoyed tea, in Angelica's room.

Even Henry would not enter the female dormitory without business, so we were able to spend the rest of the afternoon in peace.

.

.

"You lot really are obscene."

When I was having dinner with Louis, Henry appeared again.  
Can't he let it go now..... Super annoying, this guy.  
I got the fact that he does not like seeing me be friendly with someone else, very well.  
I also felt him wanting to lock me up.  
I also realised that he was doing his best to be tsun to appeal to me.  
But he's annoying. That's all I can say.  
So I ignored him. I cannot see nor hear him.

"By the way, Louis, the date you had with Jessica at that garden, how many times is it now?"  
"I was busy, I did not have the opportunity. Today was the first."  
"Then..... do you know the superstition linked to that garden?"  
"Ah. The superstition that couples who kiss there will gain eternal happiness? Of course I knew, and gained eternal happiness..... You too, Kyle, right?"  
"Well, there's no way I would let that pass."  
"I thought so."

Louis too did not react to Henry and made small talk, about things like our date.

"What, ignoring me! Do you not realise how rude you are being!?"  
I think I heard something, but no matter.  
.....However, he'll be like this even tomorrow.

"Hey, Louis, how about having breakfast in my room tomorrow?"  
"Alright, sounds great..... I'd like to have my meals in peace, at least. Then, at the usual time."  
"Wha!! What do you mean eating in the same room, what is your relationship!!!"

What should I say now.....  
For now, Henry's annoying.  
I don't need dinner anymore. Let's return quickly.

Louis and I made eye contact and left our seats.  
"Let's get some refreshments in my room. There will be tea and light snacks."  
".....Yeah."

Behind me, Henry was shouting, “Obscene! Shameless!” but I can’t hear anything!

---

Author:  
Henry’s annoying.

## Chapter 43: Hatred too is part of (love) obsession.

### Chapter 43: Hatred too is part of (love) obsession.

I took a breather in my room. For today's green tea, there were rice balls as a side dish.

The ingredients: dried plum and bonito. That's my Daniel, he knows!

Seeing me eat the rice balls with glee, Louis too took a bite in hesitation, but soon started eating it while murmuring something.

I'm glad he liked it.

As we're still in our growth phase and did not have enough for dinner, we had quite a lot of rice balls. No matter how much we eat, Daniel replenished them, almost as if conjuring them out of nowhere.

Every time he brings out more, the ingredients change, such as salmon, mentaiko, and kombu, so it was even more enticing.

I think I might have eaten two bowls' worth of rice by myself.

Whatever the case, I'm full now.

Tomorrow, breakfast will be had in my room, so I believe I can eat in peace.

While I was thinking about tomorrow's meals, Louis was staring at me.

"Hey, Kyle, what did you do to Henry?"

He said something that would be reflected badly on me if others heard.

Aren't you saying it as if I seduced him? "What did you do?" That's what I want to know. I really, truly want to know, okay?

If I learn the reason, I'll start acting to earn his ire. Still, I don't think I've done anything to gain his goodwill.

I was hated by him too. Just what is this change. This is definitely the game's work here.

"I did not do anything. Rather, it is I who wants to know the reason why..... I already know why I might be hated."

"You were pretty harsh before too....."

The two of us crossed our arms and agonised over the problem while groaning. Daniel was watching us with a grin on his face. Maybe he might know?

“Hey, Daniel. Do you know what might have switched Henry on?”  
“Is it not just that ‘hatred’ turned into ‘obsession’?”

I’m not sure what he means. What exactly is it?

‘Strong hatred’ = ‘obsession’, is that it?

I did not get it, but Louis seemed to have got it.  
Amazing, Louis. Why won’t you explain it to me.

“You do realise that the opposite of affection is not hatred, sir?”

Seeing me confused, Daniel kindly started explaining.

“Yeah. The opposite of affection should be indifference, not hatred, right?”  
“Indeed, sir. As for him, I believe that ‘imprisonment’ is his expression of excessive affection, but in this case of hatred, it turned into obsession.”  
“.....Which means?”

“It means that he is pervert through and through, sir.”

Daniel said something so harsh so nonchalantly.  
Hm..... so, since he is a pervert, he becomes obsessed even with his target of hatred, and would make perverted measures?

He really is tiresome.....

“He truly is a tiresome prince, isn’t he?”

Louis murmured as if he read my mind. His expression showed disgust towards Henry, who was going to create more problems.

“Seriously..... Is it not possible to make him return to his home country quicker?”

“This time, he has no pawns, so he needs to things on his own, so he’ll dig his own grave soon.”

“Well, he’ll probably be making a plan worthy of a small fry.”

We laughed merrily as we talked and then parted for the night.

.

.

.

“Your Highness. Angelica-sama’s room is.....”

The next morning, Louis and I were having breakfast early on, but Daniel said something disquieting.

Daniel stared off into the distance vacantly, but soon a sinister smile, one the likes of which I have never seen before, formed.

I almost thought he was a devil for a moment, you know? Really scary. And what happened with Angelica?

‘Her room’? What does he mean? What would happen in her own room, no less?

My head is full of question marks.  
If there’s something bad going on, I’ll get going right away.  
Without saying a word, I stood up.

“Please wait, sir. Your Highness should wait here. I shall go alone.”

Smiling nefariously, Daniel stopped me.  
I’m not sure what it exactly is, but he looks furious. I mustn’t go against him now.  
But, is Angelica alright? If something’s wrong with her, I’ll be going even if it angers Daniel.

“Angelica-sama is alright. It’s definitely..... a trap set for Your Highness.

When I silently stared at Daniel, I heard this in reply.  
A trap..... Angelica, is she really alright?  
The trapper is 100% Henry!

There is a very unpredictable element there.....

“Doga, please remain here. There is an *uragirimono* in our midst.”  
“!?”

“Once I exit this room, he will come here. They are eyesores, so we shall crush them all together.”

“Understood. Then, what am I to do?”

“Nothing..... ah, if possible, make an expression that says that you are very disappointed in their actions.”

Ignoring my uneasiness, the butlers Daniel and Doga were having an unsettling talk.

‘Uragirimono’, that meant ‘traitor’ or ‘turncoat’, right?

{TN: *Uragirimono* is originally in english, so I swapped it to Japanese.)

Since Daniel was not waiting for my order, it must be between the butlers.....

Daniel got truly angry.

It was the first time I ever saw him angry.

“Your Highness, I will now go to Angelica-sama’s room and take care of the problem. I believe that Henry will then come in, but may I plead you to endure it for a while, until I return?”

Since he did not say exactly what I had to endure, I deduced that it was related to the ‘pervert’.

A while, how long is that, Daniel-san!?

What will you do if I get a trauma in that short time!?

“If possible, I will return before any damage is inflicted.”

“Fufufufufu.....” Daniel chortled.

.....Somehow, I can’t seem to trust him.

But if it’s for Angelica, I can to suffer a trauma or two..... no?

“It’s not ‘if possible’, return as soon as you can!”

I don’t want a BL experience.

I’m half crying.

I can’t help it? Well, I just heard, “You’ll be a homo’s prey, but bear it for a while ☆” Anyone would cry from that!!

“Understood?”

Looking satisfied at my reaction, Daniel responded joyfully.....

But why a question?

.

.

Barely a few minutes since Daniel left, my doors flew open beautifully.....

Henry and his butler entered like general returning from a victorious campaign.

Here begins my penance -*death*.





# Chapter 44: At times like these, I'm really glad I trained my body.

**Chapter 44: At times like these, I'm really glad I trained my body.**

Author:

Violent depictions ahead.

---

Grinning devilishly as he entered the room, Henry started activating various magic tools.

His butler returned the door to normal, and went over to Doga and restrained him with a magic tool.

Like so, everyone was restrained, except for me.

Then, do they know I can move?

I didn't know, so I pretended to be 'unable to move'.

Sitting still on the chair, I observed Henry's actions. Thinking that I was rendered unable to move, he approached while smiling creepily.

Well, all I can say is that he looks like a small fry.....

"Hello, Kyle, hello. You can't move now, are you scared?"

Henry's victory smirk was very irritating. He boasted his magic tool, explaining, "This was developed by a butler, and it restricts people's movement within a specific boundary."

.....Made by a butler?

A butler would make one for their master to commit crimes?

Huh? Could that be.....

When I glanced at Doga, he furtively winked in confirmation.

I thought so. It's overstepping 'the butler's domain'.....

Of course Daniel would be angry. Daniel has pride for his job.

A butler is restricted by the 'domain'. Every butler's 'domain' differs depending on talent and magic.

If a butler wishes for freedom in his choices, he must strive to expand his

‘domain’.

And Daniel has done many things to expand his ‘charge’ from a young age. Thanks to that, he apparently became the best butler in history. Soon after I reincarnated, I was bothered by the existence of omnipotent ‘butlers’ so I asked about it. I then learned many things about them, during which I realised that Daniel had a passion for his work.

Daniel cherishes his ‘charge.’ Thus, their actions are earning his ire. First, this butler will soon see hell. Henry too acted on his own, so this time he won’t be able to avoid having his status being demoted from royalty.

Now then, how should I stall until Daniel returns..... If I act disappointed like Doga, something traumatic might happen to me, so pass that. I could feed his pride so that he will blabber everything about this plan, but he will become annoying so no. Ignoring him would make him even more annoying.....

What should I do.....

“Are you terrified? Your beautiful face is contorting..... However, here comes the ‘real terror’.”

While I was thinking, he stretched out one hand to me. The sight was so offensive, so I unconsciously grabbed his wrist and threw him by twisting my wrist. Since it would have been annoying if he stood up, I decided to hit his stomach once more. “Gubuu!” he cried out. I tried to deactivate the magic tool, but I did not know how to. As I fumbled around with the magic tool, my eyes met Henry’s butler’s.

“Huh!? How are you moving!?”

The butler, who was trying to use another magic tool to Doga, cried out in surprise. From shock, he stopped the activation of the magic tool. However, he soon came back to his senses, and silently moved right next to me. I learned some martial arts in my previous life, and Kyle learned fencing and self-defence, but it was practically futile against the cheat-like existences of butlers.

“As I thought, you are a bug..... If a mere bug is disrupting my plans, I must deal with it properly.....”

Murmuring something, he used the magic tool he was trying to use on Doga on me, restraining me.

I became unable to move, but Henry won't be getting up soon, so there won't be any BL events.

I suppose this is good enough until Daniel comes back.

“In this situation..... How are you so composed? .....How irksome, this master and servant!”

When I smiled happily, he grew frenzied.

Right afterwards, I was slapped on the cheek. Moreover, it was not 'paa' but 'guu'. Since I am a boy, I did experience a few fistfights in my previous life. However, back then, I was able to move freely so I was able to absorb the impact to some degree.

I tried to do that again this time but it did not work.

I was slapped quite heavily, but the chair feels like it's stuck to the floor, that I did not fall over.

Which meant, that I could not absorb the impact.

All the force is transferred directly to me. It hurt quite a lot.

I was slapped once more.

It was a golden opportunity to say that legendary line, “You hit me twice!”, but I refrained from saying it because of the mood.....

No one is here to retort me anyway..... and it would frenzy him even further.....

Also, unlike Robert, I can read the atmosphere, so I can say things at the right time and place. However, since I can't stop my mind from thinking, so I'd like you to forgive that.

Anyway..... it hurts.

My face is my only selling point. I'd like him to stop hitting my face. Maybe my body instead.

“How insolent.”

As if he read my mind, he spat that line in agitation and kicked me in the abdomen.

“Stop! Erius! Don’t hurt him!!!”

“Stop!! A butler is not allowed to touch a prince of another country!”

As I was starting get beaten up, Henry and Louis yelled to try stopping the butler.

Of course, to no avail.

“A bug needs to be eradicated.”

Or so he said, and continued to hit me.

Once, twice, he hit me, but when it was about time for the third hit, his movements stopped.

He was stuck in a very unstable posture as if someone pressed a pause button.

.....He’s finally back.....

“You’re late, Daniel.”

I said without moving.

Appearing silently, he calmly pointed a finger and said,

“I have arrived late. I am very sorry.....”

While trying to suppress his emotions.

With a flick of his finger, our restraints were undone.

You really are late, Daniel! My beautiful face is ruined!!

When I thought that, Daniel’s expression loosened a bit.

He looks a bit calmer now.....

It must have been unexpected for me to get assaulted like this.....

Well, for me, since it’s much better than a BL event, I feel perfectly fine with getting hit.

More importantly, there’s something that I need to know.....

“Daniel.....”

“Angelica-sama is safe. She was locked up in another dimension but it is undone.”

Sounds like Angelica is safe too.

It seems that a weird phenomenon was occurring, but I’ll leave that for later.....

I'm, relieved..... the, pain... is.....

.

I blacked out.

Translator:

My summer job is finally over! And holidays galore! Hurrah! Hurrah! Hurrah!

I

# Idle Talk: A prediction is but a prediction, it is not certain. (Daniel)

## Idle Talk: A prediction is but a prediction, it is not certain. (Daniel)

I was keeping an eye on that room.

Since I knew what kind of obsession Prince Henry had, I knew that there were no threats to their health. Also, I saw that he was trying to hide his obsession, so I had calculated that there would be no direct harm done to His Highness.

Since those sort of people enjoy it on their own without showing anyone else..... In addition, I had thought that the small fry prince would not have the gall to do anything.

This disdain became the root cause of the failure this time.....

As I could not see His Highness's fate, I could only predict. I knew the magic tool they were planning to use, and also predicted their actions from their personalities. I never thought that it could go wrong.....

I had left His Highness as 'bait' when I went to Angelica-sama's room. To softly 'exterminate' them.....

Who knew that 'suspension magic' would have no effect on His Highness.....

.

I always placed thin webs of magic on His Highness's close acquaintances.

If anything happens to them, His Highness receives the most damage.

When I serve him, I always must mind the safety of His Highness's acquaintances.

It is not uncommon for me to secretly remove threats. Especially, Jessica-sama and Angelica-sama had many attempts on them by Hughie-sama.

It seemed that Hughie-sama was interested in not only Angelica-sama but also Jessica-sama. He was scheming many things to try and get them in his hands. Though, I had been easily stopping his childish plans that did not require even an information exchange with the other butlers.....

However, when Prince Henry started intervening in those plans, it got more serious.

From then on, I started seeing him as a serious threat, but even so, I could only see him as 'a rich brat with a childish mind.' It was very puzzling. Although he reeked of a small fry and his plans were full of wholes, the plans were executed with perfect finesse. This imbalance was confusing my judgement. In retrospect, it was all the butler Erius's manipulation.....

His Highness Kyle could sometimes be seen murmuring 'is it the game's influence.....', but at first I could not understand what he meant. However, when I started analysing the incidents when he said that, I could gradually understand what he meant.

The 'game's influence'. Indeed, some things seemed predetermined, even when I could not see the visions.

Although I could not see His Highness's fate often, I could predict it from the circumstances.

However, sometimes 'completely' unexpected events happen.

For example, the teacher Brad's kidnapping and Angelica-sama's transportation to a different dimension.....

The reason is most likely the 'laws' of this world.

According to Michelle-sama, this world had many things 'set' from her previous world. Would that mean there is a scenario that 'God' had written.....

From that perspective, His Highness Kyle does somewhat feel as though he is unaffected by the 'laws' of this world.

The reason he is unaffected by the laws of this world.

Although he is hiding it, he is probably the 'same' as Michelle-sama. Then, the way he suddenly turned interesting, the way he spoke as if he knew the future and the way he comprehended Michelle-sama's story so quickly all makes sense.

In addition, it seems that those close to him easily derail from the laws of the world.....

To do so is to escape God's predetermined scenario.

However, if events happen even then, that it would mean those events are unavoidable.

By derailing from the laws of the world, the world would perceive him as a heretic bug.

His Highness may be facing these dangers because the world is moving to eradicate the bugs.

While I was restoring the dimensional mess in Angelica-sama's room, I was watching how things were unfolding in His Highness's room. As I was always close to him, I knew how he acted.

So, when I realised that 'suspension magic' had no effect on His Highness, I was very surprised. Also, when he knocked down Henry 'because he was offensive', I ended up blurting out "What the hell are you doing!?" If he stayed still, he wouldn't have been hurt, just what was he thinking.....?

I had originally predicted that His Highness would be unable to move from the suspension magic. Then, I would have been able to safely earn time and exterminate 'the problem prince from the neighbouring country'. As His Highness had hurt Prince Henry, Erius saw His Highness as 'a threat to deal with'. Normally, it would end with restraining him, but even in that situation His Highness looked aloof..... He looked as if he were enjoying that situation, even though he was great danger.....

Seeing that, Erius burst into a fit, and started beating up His Highness. Since he said, "Disappear, bug!" he too seemed to have noticed how His Highness was unaffected by the laws of this world. At that rate, Erius would have ended up hitting His Highness until he died! I had hastened my work and quickly headed to His Highness's side.

"You're late, Daniel."

That was the first thing His Highness said, while still unfazed and aloof. It was a very perplexing feeling..... I was angry at my self for being a failure of a butler that could not even predict well. I was angry at Erius for violating his domain as a butler. Yet, His Highness did not at all look resentful towards me..... and was just concerned about his appearances. I felt overwhelmed at His Highness's carefree attitude.....



I could feel my body loosen up.

However, even though he acted carefree, the violence was indeed severe, that he lost consciousness the moment he checked Angelica-sama's safety!

I urgently moved his Highness to a bed.

I checked if there were many major damage to his organs, and then applied self-restoration magic on him, to accelerate his recovery. I also set up magic tools and called for a doctor.

Still unconscious, His Highness's complexion was paling, as white as paper.....

I could tell that I was making a terrifying expression.

When I returned to the room next door, I saw Louis-sama restraining Prince Henry with a magic tool. His expression was also that of a 'demon lord'

"Daniel, how is Kyle?"

"There are no dire problems. I have applied self-restoration magic and recovery acceleration magic tools in response. I have also prepared a doctor."

"Okay....."

Louis-sama relaxed a little, but his wicked smile still remained plastered on his face.

I wonder if he might be thinking the same thing I am.....

I was frustrated at my own incompetence, and was looking for a way to vent it all out. And there was a person that fit perfectly for that role.....

Now, how should I get my reward?

---

---

Translator:

I finally realised that 閑話 was used in many novels to indicate 'side chapter' and the like, rather than the literal translation of 'idle talk' I was using. I feel so stupid... But it's too late to change it for this novel! I won't make the same mistake with other novels though, I promise!

# Idle Talk: The natural way of pride (Erius)

## Idle Talk: The natural way of pride (Erius)

A butler has an inviolable 'domain'.

.

I was born in a family that have been butlers for generations. Amongst them, I have been born with with skills and ability that would be called the best in my family.

Thinking that I would of course be a butler, I enrolled in the butler education school.

There, I was considered 'superb', but there was also another superb man two years above me, to whom I was always compared to.

"You and Daniel-kun both are excellent students. I look forward to seeing how you grow."

"Daniel, the most talented butler in history."

I was always mentioned in comparison when talks of him came up.

I never met him in person, but I hated him.

I am the only one who should be considered 'superb'. There cannot be anyone more superb that I am.....

When that man graduated with the title of 'the best butler in history', I had no doubt that title would be mine in two years.

However superb he may be, he could not be more superb against me who is from an elite bloodline.

Indeed, you can get drunk on that title for two years.

I'll soon crush that feeling.....

When I learnt that he decided to serve the empire, I decided that I will take that title from him and serve the empire myself.

I'll deprive him of the title of 'the best butler in history' and work at the same workplace, to shred his pride to pieces.

Yet.....

“Why am I not ‘the best butler in history’!”

After graduation, I screamed and destroyed my room. I could no longer suppress my destructive impulses.

On graduation day, I was told that I graduated at the top of my year, but that was it.

Why!?

I am more talented!

Why can't you see that!!??

.....If you won't acknowledge my superiority, I'll make you!!!

Which is the efficient method to make everyone acknowledge my superiority?  
How will I show that I am the more superb one.....?

I couldn't bring myself to serve the same imperial house.  
My pride did not allow that.

I have no plans to be in the same workplace as someone who is said to be more superb than me!

When I was reading the commissions, one stood out.  
A commission from a royal house. When I held it in my hands, I could not see the future.

That man was serving a prince in school, and in front of me was a request for another prince that was soon going to school.

I did not know what kind of relationship they had.....

But they both seemed to have had very uncertain futures.

This is it!

If I serve this prince and stand on the same field, I can prove that I am better!!

If the prince I serve is better than the prince he serves,.....

If it's me, I can make any prince, no matter how imbecilic they may be, into a consummate gentleman.

And using this prince, if I cause that imperial prince's downfall, everyone will admit that I am the better man!

That was the moment I decided on whom I will serve.

.

As planned, the prince I serve entered school. He was never an outstanding prince, so I did not yet have the opportunity to shine. Still, that stupid but arrogant prince would cause trouble so many times. Just to prevent any accidents from happening, the butler needed high abilities. The days were neither good nor bad. Though it went different from what I had originally planned, I had pride as a butler who could control that prince, and I was receiving praise for it as well.

“As expected of Erius. You indeed are superb.”

Such praise fed my pride. I could say with confidence that only I can take care of this prince. It was the first time I felt joy for my work, the first time since I decided to become a butler. I was curious about that man, but lately I did not feel as much hate toward him. However, this year, things started changing when my prince started approaching a new student that enrolled this year..... The prince I served showed a strange obsession for that new student. From my perspective, I could only see her as a thieving cat without any control over herself. Still, strangely enough, there were many that were captivated by that whore. All those men had become that woman's slave..... except one man.....

The fact that that person was the man that man served put a crack in my pride.

Why. Are you trying to say that the prince you serve is better than mine? Or, is it because that man is serving the prince so well, that he is not interested in that woman!? Are you saying that because I did not serve my prince well enough, he got captivated in that woman!? Then, that is tantamount to saying that he is the better butler! Is that it, huh!? He is definitely acting out of his 'domain'. That must be it!! Otherwise, it doesn't make sense that I am losing to him! There is no way I am losing!!

I felt my heart fill up with something thick. How will I bring down his imperial prince to my prince's standing. My head was full of those schemes.

There, I had a vision, different from the ones all before. It was definitely different from my 'domain'.

Something on a higher dimension..... Right, 'God's' territory.

I could see the 'laws' of the world!

The laws of the world that God set.

Since I can now see that, I am no longer a simple butler. I must work as a herald of God! 'Domains' are petty things now!!

From then on, I started moving accordingly to the laws of the world. I set up plans to split that prince and his fiancée apart and to lure him to that whore. For that, I proactively ignored my domain. I smoothly led that woman's followers to execute my plans, yet none came out as I wanted.....

Everyone was taken care of by the imperial prince!

Why!! Do you really want to prove that you are superior!!??

I can see the laws of the world! I am more superb!! Then why!!!

I see..... he is a 'bug'.

That prince is a 'bug'.

He is something that strayed off the laws set by God. That is nothing more than a 'bug'.

That's why he is being an obstacle in my path. It is not in any way that that man is superior to me.

That man is using that bug prince to ignore the laws set by God.

However.....

"As a butler, please remember to advise your master from taking radical actions."

When that idiotic prince of mine lashed out against the imperial prince, that was what that man said to me.

At those words, my pride as a butler had been shattered to pieces.

I don't care anymore about that prince ruins himself. No matter how I may be assessed.....

However, I will not let you be!!

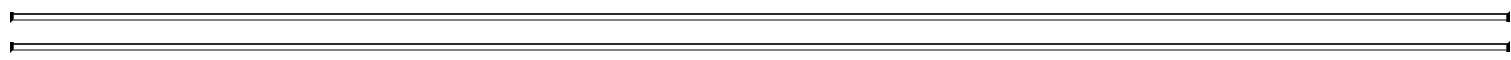
A bug needs to be eradicated. An existence that goes against the laws of the

world, I will not allow it to be!

It's all their fault that everything went wrong. They will take responsibility too.

That man who did not even care about me, and even that carefree prince!!

I will make them realise it!



Translator:

Next chapter is the final chapter for the main story.

Afterwards, there are only extra chapters remaining.

## Chapter 45: Also called the Epilogue, the scene before the next part.

Chapter 45: Also called the Epilogue, the scene before the next part.

Author:

For now, the school part is over here.

---

By the time I woke, everything was being taken care of.

Henry was extradited back to his country. Currently, he is placed under house arrest in a detached palace, but it seemed that excluding him from royalty was already decided.

He did directly harm the prince and his fiancée while studying abroad, so he won't be receiving a soft punishment.

He will either be declassified, incarcerated for life, or executed.

As for that, diplomacy between countries will decide it, so I am leaving that entirely to father.

As for Erius.....

I don't know what happened to him. He won't be going back to Henry's side, and of course he was banished from this school.

I asked Daniel about it, but I only received a meaningful smile and was not told anything.

And because Daniel's smile back then was so dark, I could never bring that up ever again like the chicken I am.

I also tried asking Louis in hopes that he might tell me.....

But he did not say a word and showed only a divine smile.

That smile. A bit traumatising, isn't it, Louis-kun?

So, I am the direct victim, yet I couldn't hear what happened to Erius.

What's going on? I'm the crown prince, aren't those two supposed to be my retainers?

Somehow, my treatment is.....

No, it's my loss if I get bothered about that.

They're not making light of me, and a good superior should be magnanimous.  
Yup.

.

Well, anyhow. Now, only Robert, Douglas and I are the only people related with "I'll Risk Everything for You" in this school.

Douglas will be able to return to high society soon enough thanks to April's counselling. I'm wondering if they might be betrothed soon.  
April started seeing Douglas differently around the time when Brad rampaged. What used to be pity turned to 'sympathy for the same kind'.  
Douglas too. As he relied on April, his warmth started coming back.  
It will take time, but I believe that these two will do well.

Robert is, well.  
He'll probably find his own happiness, no?  
I have a feeling that he will.....

Michelle is proceeding down Jackie's route at full steam. On the reports I receive occasionally, notes on their love are increasing ever more.  
Michelle needs to be quarantined until her seductive status stabilises back to normal. I am leaving that to Jackie for now.  
If it's Jackie's love, they will have their happy ending.  
So I hope they will both do their best to work to their happy ending.

In any cases, all the imminent dangers have been taken care of.  
Anything that would disturb me and Angelica's lovey-dovey school life is gone.

It's probably problematic from the game's perspective, it is a happy for me.  
I can now leisurely enjoy this school love comedy.  
.....But I can't erase this bad feeling I have.

Why!?  
Because there's still that personality problem with Michelle?  
Of course, I can't keep her secluded forever. Yet, I can't bring her back to school now.  
Taking care of that property (nature?) is an urgent problem, but that's not why I am feeling this anxious.



It might be because of what Erius said.....  
That I am a bug.  
Indeed, I was acting unlike the set scenario, so in that sense I was an existence that was out of this game world's laws.  
Since now 'Jackie END' is set in stone, the game's influence should end, that my existence should be realigned to the laws of this world again.  
So everything should be fine now.....

Just one month later, all the students will be going back home for Christmas. Since the Christmas vacation here is two months long, I should be able to take care of Michelle during that time.....  
Then I better start preparing now.  
If I do it right, Michelle should be taken care of in a flash.

So, I am planning to solidify our friendship by going to a vacation home in the mountains, to play in the snow and make memories.

In these two months, I was influenced by so many people. After I desperately took care of these problems, I managed to get a peaceful school life in my hands. So, I want to spend the time a little leisurely for a bit.  
At least for a year..... yeah?

.

No, I desperately hope for it. (Is this a flag? orz)

---

Author:

The next few chapters will be side chapters, then I will upload the Christmas chapters.  
For now, I'll this as complete, and will change the status to ongoing when I start writing this again.

---

---

Translator:

We have seven more chapters, and that's it for now. I'm not sure if the author will come back to work on this, but I will translate it if she does.

Edit:

Remind me to never translate on my phone again, I made so many mistakes in

this chapter.

# Side Story 1: Another reincarnator

## Side Story 1: Another reincarnator

Author:

This is a side chapter.

---

I thought it would just be a continuation of everyday life.

Talking about the game with my friend on the way to school and returning home while talking about the game. I then collect various information through the internet, chat with friends on line and play games. When it is time, I eat, take a bath and sleep. The next morning, I go to school.....

Everyday would be like that.

I thought it would be the same on that day too.....

.

The last thing I remember seeing is a truck. I also remember hearing screams from all around me.

.

When I came to, I was a princess of an empire. The name was 'Lilith'. I thought it was ridiculous.

That's the name of a demon in the bible!

The first wife of Adam, who sold her body to the Devil.

"What kind of naming sense is that!" I thought, but my older brother's name was 'Abel'. But then, the eldest brother's name was 'Kyle'. Half-hearted!  
Make that 'Cain'!

Then, I realised it.

Huh? Isn't this the world of the otome game I was playing before I died, "I'll Risk Everything for You"?

I learned detailed background settings of Prince Kyle from the spin-off game on the internet game.

Being the most popular love interest, he starred in spin-off mystery games, RPGs, and in shooting games.

{TN: lol what?}

The otome game '2' was also announced, that this time the story will take place in the palace. "A new hidden character will appear, and the popular love interest will return on Christmas!" it was announced, with a silhouette of Prince Kyle.

In turn, with that announcement of the sequel, a spin-off game with Prince Kyle as the protagonist was announced. In that game, there was scenario for the surprisingly popular villainess Angelica to get together with Prince Kyle, so I recall that the game was discussed hotly even before its release.

If I reincarnate in an otome game, the template is that I would reincarnate into the protagonist or the villainess, but why did I have to reincarnate as the little sister of a love interest.....

Really..... I'm unsatisfied! I request a reassignment of my role!!

Well, still, it seems that I will become the rival character in the sequel (although it's just rumours), so it's all good?

On the day of my reincarnation, there was the entrance ceremony. "Ah, the game started....." I thought, but because there were no changes in the palace it was boring.

But one day, the protagonist character Michelle came to the palace with one of the love interests Jackie.

The official reason was that he was being interrogated about the events at school, and on suspicion of espionage. In truth, the two were being placed under protection, and also being quarantined because of Michelle's special ability. It seemed that Michelle had a seducing ability, and although it's strong it's unstable and uncontrolled.

Michelle had that ability.....

No wonder why the love interests were conquered so easily!

.

But why was Jackie, a noble from another country, sent here along with Michelle.....

Apparently, Jackie and Michelle were seeing each other, and because Michelle

was causing trouble whether she is with Jackie or not, it was decided that they were to be confined to within a house prepared for the two.

Meanwhile, I was tasked with taking care of Michelle while she stayed in the castle. Since Michelle was to be handled only by women, I volunteered for the task.

Well, it was a rare opportunity to get close to a protagonist of an otome game, no? It was also pretty suspicious, what with Kyle-onii-sama sending them here.

I recall getting a strong feeling of nostalgia when I first met her. She too felt that with me, so we soon became close friends. It was as if she and I were close friends in a previous life, but since I would be laughed at if I said that I was keeping it quiet.

Then one day, I saw her sitting by the window, murmuring into the open sky, “Yacchan.....”

“Yacchan”. That was the nickname my friend in my previous life, Chinocchi, used to call me.

“Uh, could it be..... Chinocchi?”

I was uncertain, so I whispered in a hush tone. To that, Michelle opened her eyes wide and stared at me.

“Yac...chan?”

She muttered in surprise. Her eyes were saying “I can’t believe it! I’m so happy!” I grimaced at my ever honest friend.

We talked about the events that happened to us after we reincarnated. My friend took some time to become fully conscious in this life, and when she finally took control, it seemed that she was already in dire straits. However, thanks to Kyle-onii-sama’s efforts, here she was. Chinocchi said that “Kyle-sama is not a reincarnator,” but from what I’m hearing from you, he definitely is a reincarnator! Moreover, about him being lovey dovey with his fiancée Angelica, and his flag evasion rate, I was at a loss for words.

News of Kyle-onii-sama getting assaulted by Henry, who then lost his status, arrived the day I learned that Michelle is Chinocchi.

Kyle-onii-sama was assaulted by Henry's butler. It caused an uproar amongst the nobility everywhere.

A butler violated the law. The shock was quite severe, that even daemons were concerned.

My brother's butler is quite excellent, so my father said that he's left managing the aftermath to him. He is left to take care of the troublesome butler.

Even the daemons left it to him. Though I'm not sure what happened to that butler.....

Father and the upper echelons of the daemons seemed to know, but when I asked father about it, he turned pale and said, "There are things in the world best left unknown, you see?" So I couldn't hear the whole story.

While that was happening, Chinocchi's new house was prepared, so the two of them moved out. I'll be going over to see them in three days.

Us two, we spent our previous lives without any boyfriends, but Chinocchi is now a full-fledged riajuu.

Go explode!..... I won't say that, but I am jealous. When will spring come for me?

Since Kyle-onii-sama said he is going to be spending the Christmas vacation at a villa with his friends, should I tag along?

I have some things I want to talk about as fellow reincarnators.

Recently, I am hoping for someone to bring me someone good.

---

---

Translator:

The weekend is here, so allow me to dish out translations, dear graceful readers. You should expect four, but I grant you the permission to hope for six at most.

~~I love sounding so snobby and condescending~~

## Side Story 2: A day in the life of a nameless servant.

### Side Story 2: A day in the life of a nameless servant.

I am one of Kyle-sama's servants. Since I believe that you would forget my name quickly, I don't really want to tell you, but..... The name's Kunkun.

I won't tell you twice, so if you are serious on remembering it, please remember now.

My day begins with Daniel-san saying to me, "If you will not wake up soon, you may come to regret living," prompting me to wake up 30 seconds earlier than the alarm clock.

All the servants wake up then.

To change the terrible mood, I would wash my face and tidy myself up. But now, in Kyle-sama's room, we are allowed to use the same toiletry set as Kyle-sama.

"If a servant uses and knows the sets the master uses, the servant would be able to work more efficiently, no?" he said.

Kyle-sama suddenly brought this up this year. Before, we servants used more affordable articles.

The rumours of Kyle-sama's morals' changing must have been referring to this. He changed for the better, and to that we servants pledge ourselves to him.

I wonder if it's the result of using better goods?

In comparison to the servants of other nobles, we stood out.

Seemingly approving of the change, Louis-sama, Angelica-sama and Jessica-sama also made their servants use better goods.

This year, Kyle-sama also changed our food menu. He let us eat the same things he ate. On top of that, there were large servings.

"You need a healthy body to work well, no?" he would say.

This was a great help! More than the taste, as servants, we had many exhausting jobs, and up until now the amount we had was meagre in comparison to the work we had to do!!

Thanks to this improvement, our work efficiency rose a lot. “Servants of royals are from a different crop,” or so we were assessed.

Also, even though he is a prince, he was kind to us. When we greeted him or did something, he would always say “Thank you” as though it was the most natural thing. To that extent, we were taught manners and how to speak properly, very thoroughly..... from Daniel-san.....

I can’t seem to recall very much about that. I wonder why.....?

I don’t want water nor fire!! I’ll do my best! I won’t make the same mistake again! No not that animal, no more!!!!

.....Gasp!

What was I doing? I think I was daydreaming.

So, what were we talking about again? .....Ah, my daily life?  
How much did I tell you so far?

Ah, right.

Once I tidy myself up, I go fetch the flowers Kyle-sama ordered the night before, and deliver them to Angelica-sama’s side before she wakes up, along with a message card.

He wants her to see it the moment she wakes up.

Quite the possessive desire, eh?

And then, I bring back a message card from Angelica-sama, along with her gift, ranging anywhere from handkerchiefs embroidered by her, to bookmarks made from the flowers.

I leave those Daniel-san, and then I start preparing for breakfast with other servants. At the end, one servant goes off somewhere else, but it is not problematic.

When it’s almost prepared, Daniel-san enters, escorting Kyle-sama who just finished preparing.

“Good morning, everyone.”

When he says that, we also respond, “Good morning, Kyle-sama,” heeding proper manners. By the way, it’s important that we do not say, “My lord prince”. Kyle-sama seems to like confirming that people are seeing him as an individual



not as a prince.

Thus, we always say “Kyle-sama” when we talk to him.

.

Once Kyle-sama leaves to attend his classes, we make the beds, clean the rooms and prepare to cook dinner. Then, we make our own lunches and prepare for teatime snacks.

Daniel-san too helps, but because Kyle-sama likes having variety, we prepare at least three kinds every time.

It seems that other servants do not usually cook, but for us it's a skill we naturally need to learn.

At noon and at night, Kyle-sama dines in the school dining hall, but sometimes he says, “I want to eat at my place today.” And for some reason, he once did not eat a lot and came back saying “I'm hungry.....” so we have food stocked up.

We have to throw quite a lot away because they are uneaten, but sometimes we get to eat them instead, so it's killing two birds with one stone!

.

It becomes busy in the evening again.

People frequently visit Kyle-sama in his room, so we have to work hard to receive them.

For the toughest parts, Daniel-san takes care of them, but when people get too excited, he prepares an aroma with soothing effects. He then brings out those snack at the right timing, and if necessary, goes to the other person's room to their messenger. The messengers are sometimes told to stop by Daniel-san, but otherwise he tells the messenger to deliver this: “come and retrieve your master”.

While we serve our guests, at the same time, we prepare a hot bath. The water is kept at a high temperature, and we take care to not let it get cold.

Once our guests go back, we need to take care of some work for tomorrow, but once Kyle-sama finishes taking his bath, he lets us take baths too, letting us relieve the fatigue we built.

After we all finish bathing, we go off to sleep just around midnight.

This is our daily life, but did you really want to know this?

I

## Side Story 3: Onii-chan's situation with women.

### Side Story 3: Onii-chan's situation with women.

My onii-chan is changing a little, I think.....

As a brocon recognised both by myself and by others, I still love my onii-chan, but the world is strict.

.

He looks somewhat handsome, and he is quite popular because of his soft and kind personality. However, for some reason, he can't seem to make his relationships with girls last long.

First, it's usually that the girl confessed to him persistently that he starts going out with her. I never saw him confess to someone.....

Many people think that he will be a 'good boyfriend' because of his soft and kind personality, but it appears that it's not the case. For example, if mum calls him, saying, "Mum's coming back late today, so please come home early for your little sister," he would come back on time, even if he has a date. He prioritises family events over his girlfriend, and if he is forced to choose between studying and dating, he chooses studying. Thus, the women who became his 'girlfriend' all get tired of him, that they break up quickly, with four months being the longest time they lasted.....

Before he starts going out, he always explains that 'he puts his family first' and that 'he wants to focus on studying more than on romance'. Then he accepts if they say they want to date him even so. However, when it actually comes down to them, the girlfriends get annoyed by him and eventually break up. They probably were thinking that they would become 'his special someone', but seeing that his attitude did not change, they probably left because they got restless.

Well, I think it's partly onii-chan's fault for going out with someone he doesn't like because he's tired of rejecting confessions..... But I definitely think that he was using them as sexual release.....

He never cheated on them, but I did see a thin square package in his wallet, so

it's certain.

.

Summer vacation. I decided that I would clear the popular otome game 'I'll Risk Everything For You'.

I'll do it on my own, without relying on any information from the internet nor from books. It will be a hard and lonely task.....

Thus, I set my eyes on onii-chan, who just happened to have free time because he broke up recently. He accepted my request to help me clear the game.

I asked him to advise me on what kind of lines would raise the love interests' affection, from a man's perspective. To onii-chan, the protagonist was to him, "This bitch, naiwaa~".

But onii-chan, your past girlfriends, they were like this protagonist a little more roundabout, you know?

"If I were to choose someone, it would definitely be Angelica!"

Onii-chan.....

All your 'girlfriends' so far were like Michelle, the protagonist, okay?

Really, he only saw 'them' as 'sexual release'.

Sometimes, he almost sounds like a virgin.....

Could it be..... Onii-chan. Are you going to say something like 'no first love yet' like a manga protagonoist?

Anyway, he always placidly accepted breakups, and the reason he started dating was also a bit strange, so it's possible to think that he never really liked any of them, but to never have loved, that's not possible.

On top of that, his ideal woman is someone beautiful who is independent and can assert herself..... I think it'll be very hard to find someone like that in real life?

Today, like always, I watched my brother with a lukewarm smile, as he helped me with the game as he dissed the protagonist. "I wish someone like that would really appear for him," I softly murmured.....

---

Author:

And so his first love was achieved in his next life.

---

---

Translator:

This one was really short!

|

# Side Story 4: きす(Kiss)・キス(Kiss)・Kiss

## Side Story 4: きす(Kiss)・キス(Kiss)・Kiss

Translator:  
Any suggestions for the title?

---

---

Author:  
This episode takes place after ‘Idle Talk: How to calm down her in heat (Louis’s case)’, when he proposes to her.

---

---

My lifelong dream, ‘betrothal with Jessica’ was achieved.

.

The night after that ‘aphrodisiac incident’, Jessica came back to her senses and was looking at me awkwardly.

Having forced herself up from the bed, she was hanging her head down, with only her eyes looking at me.

“Good... morning.....”

While looking at me with puffy eyes from crying too much, she responded with a voice that went hoarse from crying too much.

To such a lovely woman, I kneeled and held out a small bouquet of pink roses.

“Jessica..... my dear... please marry me.”

I had thought of many different lines for my proposal, but in front of her none of them came out.

I could only ask for her hand in marriage.

Even I thought it was tacky, but from the ordeal we went through, my head was still a bit confused, that nothing witty came out of my mouth.

It took all my strength to just plaster on the usual smile on my face.

To hide my anxiety, I desperately put up a smile, but in a blink Jessica’s expression turned into a sad one. She bit her lips so hard that I worried that she might bleed, and she was just staring at the bed sheet while hanging her head

down. Tears welled up in her eyes, about to flow down at any moment.

Eh!? Why??

I panicked because I did not know why she had such an expression, but I managed to prevent it from showing on my face.

Jessica stayed silent, with a pained expression. I waited for her response, still holding out the bouquet with a smile.

A bystander may see me as composed, but in truth I was extremely panicked. Because, no matter how one saw it, Jessica's expression was not that of someone receiving a proposal.

"Louis-sama..... you do not have to worry about this incident.....? This was a result of my careless actions....."

Saying that, Jessica slowly lifted her head up and showed me a miserable smile.

"Louis-sama, you do not need to take any responsibility....."

What!

Jessica seems to think that I am proposing to take responsibility. Of course, I do need to take responsibility for holding her up in my room for days.

However, the reason I brought into my room was because I liked her, and I proposed to her because 'I' wanted her.

.....Wait a moment.....

Come to think of it..... Did I ever tell Jessica that I 'like' her.....?

If Jessica, who did not know my feelings, receives a proposal from me, who has a nervous smile.....

Of course she would misunderstand.

I felt anxious.

I wanted to convey my feelings to her, but if I say, "I like you!" in panic, I won't be believed. Jessica might think, 'to fake his own feelings for me.....'

.....It might be cowardly, but should I try conveying my feelings through actions?

I slowly sat down next to her — on the bed — and placed the bouquet on the sheet. Softly, I placed a hand on her head, and slowly caressed her.

I locked my eyes to her, who was fidgeting, and locked hands with her. When I slowly brought my face closer to her, Jessica winced a little back, increasing the

distance again.

“I like you..... I always have.....”

I whispered just loud enough for only her to hear and approached her, but yet again Jessica flinched backwards.

However, her forehead was there in a perfect spot, so I kissed her there without a sound.

Like that, I kept kissing her forehead, before I pulled back to see her face. I stroked the back of her head, and sometimes tickled her ears.

Jessica had a rapturous expression as she had her eyes closed.

Too cute!

A smile appeared on my face. Feeling mischievous, I made a smacking sound as I put my lips on her nose, and then lightly licked there.

Surprised, Jessica opened her eyes wide.

“Fufu..... Jessica..... you are cute.....”

When I whispered softly while touching her cheek, she too smiled shyly. Because she was so cute, I gently rubbed my forehead and nose to hers.

“I liked you from a long time ago..... I always thought to take you away from Robert.....”

To Jessica who was staring at me, again I whispered my feelings to her. When I grazed my lips lightly across hers, tears welled up in her eyes again.

However, these tears did not seem to be tears of pain.

Because..... she was smiling happily.....

“I like you..... I love you. I always have, and will forever more.....”

As I whispered softly, our lips continued to graze and touch each other, evolving into something deeper.

I continued to kiss her as the strength left her body. Then, I held her and stared at her from up close.

“Jessica..... will you marry me? I will kiss you in this room until you say ‘yes’, alright?”

Declaring so, I gently kiss her to prove it.



I removed my hand from the back of her head and grabbed the bouquet that was placed on the bed, and gave it to her. Then I wrapped my hands around her hand that was holding the bouquet.

Though I said I would not accept any other reply than yes, I continued to desperately convince her.

“I will do anything to have you. When Robert caused that commotion in the dining hall, deep inside, I secretly thought of it as an opportunity..... This time too, I brought you in here to never let you go.”

While locking our mouths many times, I told her of my dark personality. It was terrifying to reveal my obsession, but I wanted her to know my true feelings. I stopped holding her hands as though I was holding caramel, and placed my hands on her cheeks, changing the angle many times as I kissed her over and over again, until she made an ecstatic expression.

“I know that you still could not forget Robert..... But, can I ask you to give up and become mine.....?”

Almost clinging to her, I said from up close. Jessica looked surprised for the first time. However, her expression slowly softened into a warm smile, and then she gently locked her lips to mine.

“My heart already belongs to a brother of my close friend..... from here on... will you be my prince?”

After she kissed me, she responded embarrassedly.  
Her confession. I was so happy that I was afraid that I might lose myself.

“Of course! Till death do us part..... no, even if death tears us apart, I will be your prince.....! .....Jessica..... I love you.”

Then, we kissed to the extent that our lips may have got swollen up, kissing over and over again, confirming each other.

Like this, I safely became my beloved's fiancé.....

# Side Story 5: Fun life in imprisonment

## Side Story 5: Fun life in imprisonment

Author:

From Jackie's perspective.

---

It's already been three days since we were brought to the castle under the pretence of 'imprisonment'

During these three days, I spent the time in a luxurious room, except when I was made to sit through sham interrogations, but I never had a chance to meet Michelle.

For me, a room for vips was prepared.

The food too was amazing, that I almost blurted out, "royalty indeed!". I had no complaints about my treatment.

Thanks to His Highness Kyle, Michelle won't be having any problems. So I am not worried about that.....

But since I didn't see her face for three days, I did get worried.

"Erm..... How is Michelle doing?"

Because I was so curious and wanted to see her, I decided to politely ask the servant that brought the meals.

"Imperial Princess Lilith is taking care of Michelle-sama. The two get along well, and are already close friends."

"Is that so..... I'm glad to hear that."

To the servant that smiled gently, I returned a smile.

If the imperial princess herself is taking care of Michelle, than there won't be any big problems.

They seem to be on friendly terms as well.....

A part of me felt jealous that someone other than myself was being friendly with Michelle, but I felt relieved at the fact that Michelle was in a safe environment.

.

After that incident with Brad, when I spent time with her until the aftereffects faded, I felt that my heart crossed the final line. Over the feelings of 'lovely', 'I want to protect her' and 'I want her to be happy', I gained an obsession wanting to spend the rest of my life with her. I thought it possible to abandon country and family if it was for that.

I had tightly hugged and consoled Michelle who was sobbing from the effects of the drug, The little figure that was trembling in my arms was so lovely, yet it felt so fragile. 'What should I do to protect her,' that was the only thought that occupied my head.

Back then, I think I was being arrogant. Now, I don't feel so haughty. The next time I see Michelle, what will I feel for her.....

I felt uneasy and worried. Another three days passed like that. Today, I'll be getting busy because I need to pack things from the morning. .... Right, the safe house for Michelle and me were prepared for me, so we will be moving today. At the 'safe house', I will be living with Michelle, so the worry that I won't be able to see her — meet her is gone. But, the biggest worry on my mind was on how I would be feeling like when I rendezvoused with Michelle.

We were moved to the 'safe house' from the castle separately.

At first, a few maids and butler were scheduled to be sent from the castle, but because there were not enough butlers to spare, my butler was tasked with the house.

He — Lloyd is a butler of House Fine, but when it was decided that he was to be assigned to me, he declared, "In a time of emergency, I may leave the duke's house as Jackie-sama's butler."

In retrospect, he may have already seen this fate.

.

"Jackie! I missed you!"

The girl I wanted to meet..... The lovely girl whom I yearned for lunged into my

chest with words of joy.

Dying her cheeks in a rosy shade, she looked at me with moist eyes. That appearance was the girl I knew..... I felt no trace of harsh treatment toward her. In addition, her unstable mind seemed to now have become an unshakable bastion.

My worry that 'I might change if I meet her' was just a worry, nothing more. Indeed, there were no changes to my feelings.

I want to protect my lovely Michelle, but that thought of 'risking everything', as though I was under a spell, was no longer there. I felt more passionate, but it was warm.

"Michelle..... I missed you too. Weren't you lonely?"

"It was sad that I couldn't see Jackie..... but..... at the castle, I met 'Yacchan'!"

Said she, while softly smiling.

"'Yacchan', the girl you were always calling out to into the sky!?"

Michelle seemingly was attacked by a 'truck' and lost her life along with her friend, and then 'reincarnated' here.

Then, that 'Yacchan' or whoever also had 'reincarnated' here in this world. For that person to be so close to the imperial family.....

"You see, the princess here, Lilith, was taking care of me, but she turned out to be 'Yacchan'! I was really surprised!"

I was more surprised at Michelle's words.

I did think that it would be someone close to the imperial family, but to be a member itself.....

However, it meant that Michelle's safety was practically guaranteed. My burden felt like it became lighter.

I also thought that Michelle's mind became stable because she reunited with her old friend.

"I see..... that's great..... then now, I am no longer needed, no?"

".....!"

Because Michelle was smiling so happily, I ended up something that I didn't even mean out of jealousy.

Suddenly, Michelle's eyes flooded with tears and started trembling shakily. Seeing her like that, I instinctively felt danger, so I hurriedly hugged her tightly.

"It's a joke! I was just a bit jealous of 'Yacchan'. If Michelle says 'I don't need you anymore', I'll be locked up instead of Henry!"

"Don't say that! I want to be with you, until you say you don't need me anymore..... I love you. Jackie, I lo....."

I sealed her lips.

Too cute!

I want to take her to the bedroom right now!!

"I'll never do that..... will you be by my side until I die?"

When I whispered up close, she nodded while blushing bright red. Excited, I suggested, "Shall we go to sleep together?" In response, she softly replied, "Baka....." while cuddling up to my chest.

I lifted her up and swiftly carried her away to the bedroom, and we spent a sweet time until nighttime.....

.

Anyway.

Michelle and I escaped Henry's influence, and started moving towards our own futures.

There will be many ordeals.

Michelle seems to activate a strange ability when her heart and mind are unstable.....

However, if I wrap her in my unwavering love for her, there will not be any problems.

I learned how to show my love in many more ways too, so I'll whisper my love to her so much that she won't have room for anything else.....

While thinking of these things, I am now enjoying my life in imprisonment in the 'safe house' .....

---

Author:

Michelle's ability goes out of control when she mentally unstable.

---

---

Translator:  
Right, I'm back after having dinner.

I

# Side Story 6: Henry's punishment

## Side Story 6: Henry's punishment

Author:

From Jackie's father's perspective.

---

The troublemaker prince came back to Uruhara——

The news, along with the reason why, spread at a frightening speed.

The reason —— He assaulted the crown prince of the neighbouring country, the Empire of Fox, with cooperation from his butler. Many people, including me, trembled in fear that war might break out over this.

Just around a week before the prince was sent back here, my son, along with another girl, was incarcerated on 'suspicion of espionage'. Also, the second son of a count from the Empire, who was in the same group as them, was sent here to study abroad here.

In these times, there were worries that the fifth prince of Uruhara directly assaulting the crown prince of the Empire may increase diplomatic tensions, evolving into war.

That was what the people of this country distressed over.

However, the Empire had no thoughts to exaggerate this incident, so what came to our country was a demand to 'strip Henry of his status of royalty, and to leave him to a person who has a delusional disorder and an obsession for Henry'. Of course, since he caused this turmoil, it is a given that his status will be demoted.

Normally, a country would execute or imprison one for life to show that 'the country has no desire for war'.

However, what our neighbour demanded was 'the act' that Prince Henry was planning to do on Prince Kyle.

As for me, since I knew Prince Henry's interest from Jackie's clairvoyance, I could accept the demand. However, except for the king and the crown prince, members of the royalty — especially Prince Henry's mother, the first queen,

overreacted to it.

“Why does the Empire of Fox want such a harsh treatment to Henry!? It’s enough to confine him!”

“If you think of what Henry tried to do to Prince Kyle, isn’t this a natural request? We should be thankful that we could avoid war!”

“Mother..... You may not know this, but there are already many women in this country that fell prey to Henry. We told him to fix it, and even sent him abroad. But now that he caused trouble even abroad..... we could no longer protect him.....”

“My son was tasked with the surveillance of that prince, but due to the influence of that prince’s scheme, my son is now incarcerated there. Since even a butler cooperated with the prince, it’s natural that the Empire wishes for punishment.....”

To the queen’s cries, the king, the crown prince and I coolly prospected. In this conference room, there were also many other senior statesmen, but none dared to speak out and just darted their eyes around restlessly. They were all thinking that ‘they should abandon the prince’ if it’s to avoid war. Only Henry’s mother had pity for him. Even his father and his brother prioritised the state, and decided to cut away a minor royal (Prince Henry).

Normally, to end the seeds of unrest, he would be executed, but if our neighbour demanded that ‘he should face punishment worse than death’ we have to follow.

Everyone accepted the punishment as a reasonable. We could not risk worsening our relations just because the queen wanted to protect ‘her child’.

“If you are doing this out of thought as ‘Henry’s mother’ than as the queen, I must request that you too be confined.”

“!!!”

To the words of the King, which were like an ultimatum, the queen became speechless.....

No matter how much she loves her son, she is the queen of a country. Considering that position, she must accept any bitter choices.



“We too are responsible for neglecting Henry until he caused this problem.....”  
“.....”

Many times, the crown prince attempted to reeducate Henry. Yet, every time, the queen got in his way, and just attached a capable butler to clean after Henry. Now, he was indirectly denouncing the queen for her choices. The real intention behind those words would be ‘it’s your fault for spoiling him’, I suppose.....

They were born from the same queen, yet the brothers are so different. If Prince Henry had at least half as much sensibility as the crown prince, he probably wouldn’t have come to this end..... Since it all came to this as the queen cherished her son that looked like her too much, she could only accept this as from her own doing.

.  
After the treatment towards Prince Henry was decided on, the rest progressed quickly.

There was already a noble who had a delusional obsession for the queen..... So Prince Henry was left to that man. He will spend the rest of his life imprisoned by him. From here on, Prince — he is no longer a prince anymore. Henry’s life — how he is living — needs to be reported to the neighbouring country as well..... For that task, we, the House of Fine, took it up.

My son — Jackie — seems to be planning to become Prince Kyle’s retainer in the empire. For us too, it was great that we gained a contact in the Empire, something that we could not even hope for. Although he could no longer return to this country, but the benefit was much bigger. Jackie seems to have already gained a fiancée there, and is apparently living happily together.

They are planning to marry after Jackie graduates from school next year. The wife will have to drop out from school, but it was common for ladies to do so. If they have a child by next year, they may also marry earlier.

.....

It may give him a bad reputation, but because they're not from the royalty, no nobles criticise premarital sex or premarital pregnancy too harshly.

The only worry left was that the man coming here, the second son of a count, Hughie has the 'same thoughts' as Henry.....

From the information bureau's report, it seems that the youngster called Hughie is a splitting example of a rude arrogant noble.  
I heard that he is anxious that the authority that he had in his country had no influence here.  
At this rate, it would not be strange for him to cause trouble any time, but because of the current situation we cannot send him back either.  
Instead, they said that we could punish him however we want whenever we want, so if he does cause any trouble, we will not hold back on the punishments.  
Because I believe that is the best I could do for Jackie and my future daughter-in-law.....

---

Author:  
Quite the stinging punishment.....

---

---

Translator:  
One more to go.

# Side Story 7: April, the miserable girl?

## Side Story 7: April, the miserable girl?

Author:

April's annulment of engagement from her perspective.

---

“Hughie is obsessed over a daughter of a baron that enrolled this year.”

When I heard this rumour, I felt as though the world crumbled.

.

My betrothal with Hughie was arranged three years ago.

{TN: She uses atashi to refer to herself.}

I was to enter school soon back then, but my marriage was not yet set.

The reason being my personality.

My older sister like personality was apparently insufferable for men of my age.

Then there was Hughie, who also had trouble finding a fiancée because of his personality. With a petty reason of ‘the spoiled Hughie needs a motherly figure like April’, we were betrothed.....

.

“Hughie..... you are free to love, but can you please refrain from doing things that will harm my reputation as well?”

Why do I have to caution him on something so obvious.

I suppressed that feeling and talked to Hughie, but.....

“What are you talking about, April? Older women’s jealousy is ugly, you know?”

It was wrong of me to expect a noble bearing from a childish young master.

Hughie despised me too, so these kinds of insults were an everyday thing.

Having a strong personality, I really always wanted to rebuke him, but because of my family circumstances, it was hard to break up so I was always the aggrieved.....

.  
My House was a count's house, but we were not that rich. Also, we had many children, so it was hard to make ends meet.

We had a long history, so our house is prestigious, but it also meant that prestige was all we had.

The betrothal with Hughie, whom everyone went, "he's a bit.....", was purely political, because House Woodlloyd, which had a short history, could import our 'class' into theirs.

So, I did not mind too much if Hughie tried to make lovers. However, I at least expected the minimum manners.

"Many men are surrounding one girl, infatuated with her," or "Prince Kyle is counselling Hughie, yet he is ignoring him." When such rumours are spreading, things are different.

Furthermore, when he says things like, "Oh, of course I would choose a lovely young woman over an older nagging woman, don't you see?" which hurts my reputation as well, anyone would want to complain, no?

So, I told him to be a little cautious to not earn the ire of the crown prince, something very obvious, but Hughie just returned an idiotic remark back. Feeling lost, I decided to call both my house and House Woodlloyd for counselling.

As a result.....

At the point I thought 'I can't do this anymore!' the betrothal was annuled, with House Woodlloyd taking responsibility.

They apparently received complaints from Prince Kyle too, and even the Woodlloyds sent many letters telling Hughie to 'fix his attitude'.

On top of that, even his butler was advising him to change his attitude, but he's still like that.

I heard that even his house was considering how to take care of him.....

Then, I should observe a little more, and if his attitude remains unimproved, I'll abandon him!

The day after I resolved to do so, that incident happened.

.

The commotion was between Robert-sama 'the musclehead', as assessed among nobles, and Angelica-sama, Kyle-sama's fiancée, at the dining hall..... Thanks to Prince Kyle and Louis-sama's quick thinking, they were able to prevent the worst. Still, Kyle-sama looked enraged..... His rage was pointed not only toward the perpetrator of the commotion, Robert-sama, but also toward Hughie and Douglas.

Thus.....  
Kyle-sama summoned them to caution them.....  
But Hughie's attitude then!

What if Prince Kyle was not a magnanimous person.....  
What was with that arrogant and rude attitude?

Right there, I decided to break off the betrothal.

After being chastised from Prince Kyle, Hughie met up with me to discuss some things. However, only excuses came out from his mouth. I could not see a trace of him feeling sorry.  
Even towards his butler who advised him, "You're annoying! Go back home already!" said Hughie, and chased him out of the room.

For a noble to not understand the importance of a butler.....  
How stupid are you??  
Did you even receive education back home?  
Here I am struggling this much at school because we do not have the money to spare for a butler!

After chasing his butler out, Hughie made a satisfied smile of victory.  
To him, I spoke very coldly.

"Hughie-sama, let us break off our betrothal today. I already have permission from both houses, and I will notify this to both houses later."  
"Huh? What are you talking about, April? A woman like you, if you fail to marry with me, you'll never be able to get a proper marriage, don't you see?"

When I notified him that I am breaking off the betrothal, he said that in a very condescending tone.....

You, just how many times do you need to insult me to be satisfied?

Of course, if I break off my betrothal with Hughie, no one would approach this unlovable girl.

However, in comparison to marrying this idiot, I would rather stay single forever and work as a palace maid!

“I’d rather stay single forever than marry you.”

So I said that straight at him.

This spoiled man could not bear hearing that.

Of course, he turned bright red and started trembling.

“W-w-who are you to say that to me! I even took it on myself to marry with an old maid like you.....!! Ungrateful woman, I almost feel sorry for you! I don’t even want to see you, get out!”

As I expected, he was cursing and shouting “get out!” hysterically.

I, to purposefully rub him the wrong way, politely bid farewell and exited the room.

Even so, Hughie was screaming, ‘Get out! Get out! Get ou—t!!!’ like an idiot.

I feel much better!

When I returned to my room, Kyle-sama requested me. “Please counsel Douglas, he is mentally unstable,” he said.

Douglas lost his fiancée last year from disease.

I also saw Douglas back then, and also felt that recently he did not feel like himself.....

From the thing with Hughie, I seem to have caused Prince Kyle some trouble. It looked like he worked behind the scenes a lot.

To repay his kindness, and also out of consideration for my future, I accepted his request.

.

I was planning to take the request with this light feeling.....

I was already pierced by those shaky pupils, that I held romantic feelings for Douglas before I realised it.....

Aah.

To fall in love in such an absurd manner.....

I really am a miserable girl.

---

Author:

Hughie did like April, in his own way.

However, because he was just a childish kid, his way of expressing it was lacking.....

---

---

Translator:

I'm done with this one!

I also uploaded [the characters page](#). It can be reached by the project page.

|